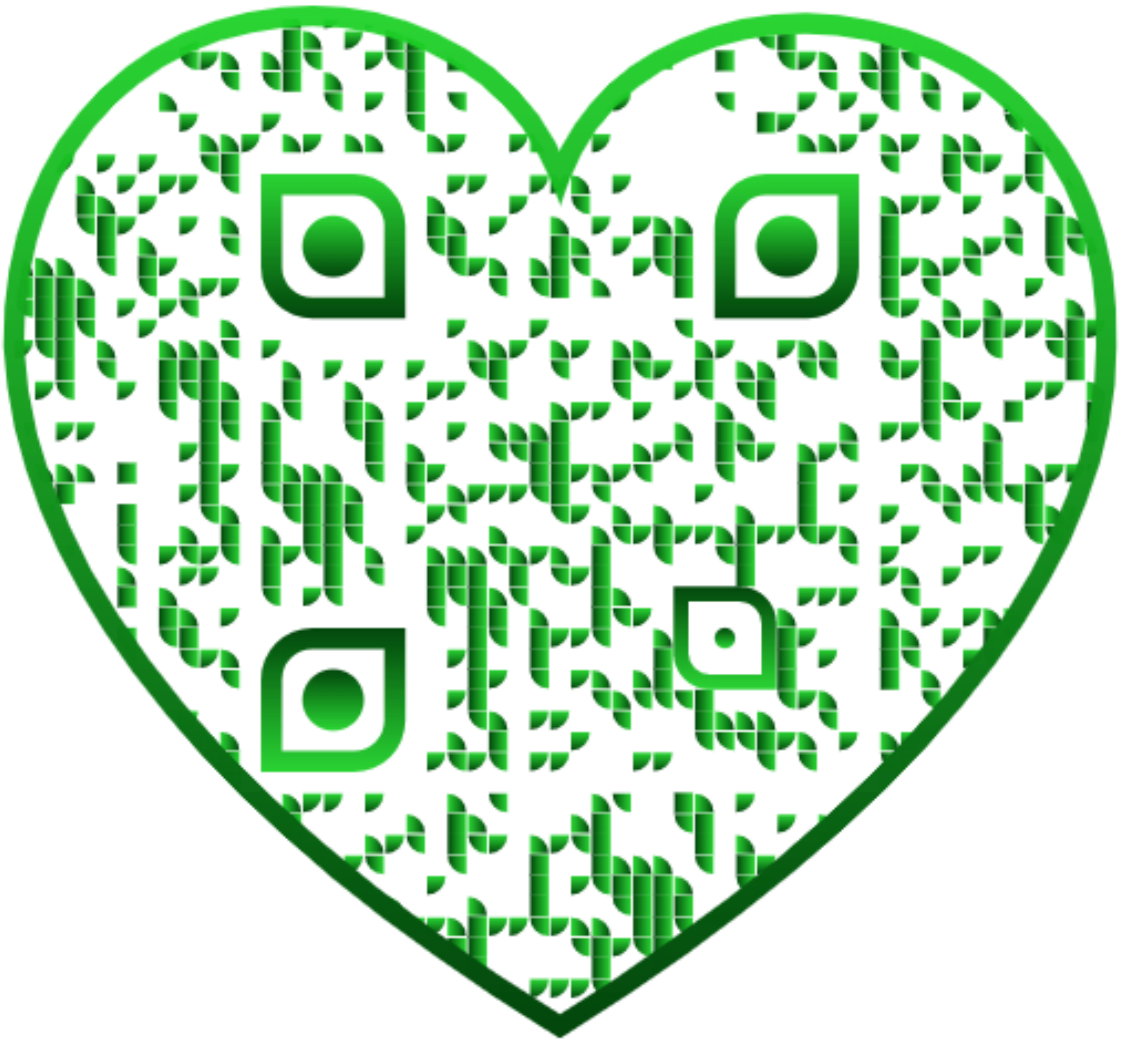
FLYING SAUCER TO THE CENTER OF YOUR MIND

SELECTED WRITINGS OF JOHN A. KEEL

EDITED BY ANDREW B. COLVIN



FLYING SAUCER TO THE CENTER OF YOUR MIND

SELECTED WRITINGS OF JOHN A. KEEL

EDITED BY ANDREW B. COLVIN

METADISC BOOKS
THE SEATTLE CONCEPTUAL ART MUSEUM | SEATTLE

CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

INTRODUCTION BY TESSA B. DICK

EDITOR'S NOTE

FOREWORD: THE GOLDEN BOY BY GRAY BARKER

INTRODUCTION: FIRST AND LAST WORDS

CHAPTER I

- What the CIA Is Not Telling Us About UFOs – Male magazine Project Beta: An Analysis of Reports of Unidentified Aerial Objects
- What Are They?
- North America 1966: The Great Wave

CHAPTER 2

- Investigating UFOs: Probing a Phenomenon Wrapped in Mystery

CHAPTER 3

- Keel's Speech to the Congress of Scientific Ufologists – New York City MIB: 1967-68 – Saucer News, Spring/Summer 1969

CHAPTER 4

- The UFO Silencers – SAGA magazine, May 1975

CHAPTER 5

- "Contactee" Rustling – 1979 Lecture
- Type 1: Trance Contactees
- Type 2: Post-Hypnotic Contactees
- Type 3: Hallucinatory Contactees
- Type 3 Subgroup: Distortions of Reality
- Type 4: Astral Projection Contactees
- Type 5: Cosmic Illumination Contactee
- Type 5 Subgroup: False Illumination
- Type 6: The "Genuine" Contactee
- Cattle Mutilation For Beginners – Anomaly #11, April 1974

CHAPTER 6

The Flying Saucer Evidence Everyone Ignores – SAGA magazine, June 1973

CHAPTER 7

The Mothman Monster – SAGA magazine, Oct. 1968

CHAPTER 8

Never Mind The Saucer! Did You See The Guys Who Were Driving It?

CHAPTER 9

West Virginia: A Plethora of Paranormal – 1994 Lecture The Infrared Tower – 1990 Lecture

CHAPTER 10

The UFO Name Game – Beyond Reality magazine, Jan. 1976

CHAPTER 11

The Subject of Saucers – Anomaly magazine #1, May 1969

CHAPTER 12

The Contactee Key – UFO Report, Aug. 1977

CHAPTER 13

Behind the FBI's Undercover Flying Saucer Investigation

CHAPTER 14

Mystery of the Invisible Flying Saucers – SAGA magazine, Winter 1974

CHAPTER 15

UFOs and the Mysterious Wave of Worldwide Kidnappings

CHAPTER 16

Mysterious Gas Attacks – SAGA magazine, July 1968

CHAPTER 17

The Secret UFO-Astronaut War – Men magazine, Sept. 1968

CHAPTER 18

UFOs and Abominable Snowmen: A Noted Authority's Weirdest Cases

CHAPTER 19

The Flying Saucer Crime Wave They Can't Cover Up

CHAPTER 20

Ocean-Based UFOs Ring the United States – Male magazine, Dec. 1970

CHAPTER 21

Was Philip K. Dick a Flake? – New Frontiers magazine, 1987

CHAPTER 22

The Secret Tape to the Congress of Scientific Ufologists

CHAPTER 23

Medical Aspects of Non-Events – Anomaly magazine, 1969-72

Sex and the Single Saucerer

Symptoms of Hallucination

Classification of Hallucination

CHAPTER 24

Secret UFO Bases Across the U.S. – SAGA magazine, April 1968

"A Question of Responsibility"

INTRODUCTION

BY TESSA B. DICK

In his own work, Andy Colvin digs deeper than the headlines when he comes across a story. Inspired by personal experience with the Mothman phenomenon, he delves into realms of mysterious and fascinating events which, according to common sense, ought not happen. From phantom armies of angels (which have been reported as recently as the 6 Day War in Israel) to fantastic creatures that morph into something even more strange, Colvin has taken on the decades-long task of documenting, compiling, and theorizing about the evidence for Mothman, UFOs, and earthly conspiracies.

Along the way, Colvin has archived and re-popularized the "lost" works of John A. Keel. Keel is one of our best sources on the history of Mothman, since he was there, onsite, and interviewed the witnesses at the time of their sightings. Keel also happens to be perhaps the top UFO and Fortean investigator of the late 20th century.

This volume, which explores the writings and thoughts of John Keel , goes deep into the flying saucer mystery and other strange phenomena. It is a fascinating read.

Although much of Flying Saucer to the Center of Your Mind was written decades ago, this book sheds new light on UFOs and other mysterious phenomena. For those who are not already familiar with Keel's work, it will be a mind-opener. For those who have read Keel , this volume not only provides a useful refresher course, but also includes rare material from now-defunct magazines and other obscure sources that many have never read or even heard of before.

One tale in particular caught my attention: three teenagers who swear they saw a huge bird transform into a golden boy. This tale is reminiscent of El Dorado, the legendary Inca chief who used to bathe in gold dust until he shone like the sun.

It also brings to mind Philip K. Dick's story, "The Golden Man." If you saw the movie Next, which was purportedly based on that story, you have no idea

what Phil really wrote. The story was about the dangers of eugenics programs. (Although within the story, the biological mutations are caused by nuclear contamination.)

Of course, the chapter on Philip K. Dick interests me the most, since I was married to Phil. This chapter accurately describes bits and pieces of my husband's experience and his attempts to deal with it intellectually.

The most striking experience that Phil and I shared was with what he and I called Firebright. This name occurred to him because of the bright lights that danced around our apartment, and it formed a significant part of the inspiration for his novel VALIS. He referred to the experience with Firebright and other entities as VALIS, which is an acronym for Vast Active Living Intelligence System. Firebright was a blue electrical arc the size of a tennis ball that flitted around the room as if it were a moth. At one point, it landed on Phil's forehead. (This was some time after his pink light experience, which also targeted his forehead.)

Firebright seemed to be a friendly creature which possessed some intelligence or instinct, such as that of a bird. Birds are actually very intelligent, but that is another story. (The supernatural "king of birds" in Asia, which is known as the Garuda, is depicted in ancient texts and carvings as a bird-man hybrid. The Garuda was at the top of Keel's list of possible explanations for Mothman.) Firebright's physical movements seemed moth-like, too, which might connect it with Mothman (the nickname that the media gave the West Virginia Birdman). My experiences with Phil and Firebright did seem similar to those described by Keel as experienced by UFO and Mothman witnesses in the Ohio Valley.

Firebright appeared in the midst of a period of harassment of an electromagnetic nature. For example, sometimes at night our little bedside radio could not be turned off, not even when it was unplugged. The first time that happened, we asked the guys next door, who shared a common wall with us, if they had left their radio on in the kitchen that night. They said they had not. A short time later, after they moved out, workmen in gray coveralls emerged from a yellow Ford Econoline van and carried large cardboard boxes into the vacant apartment next door. After that, the strange electromagnetic phenomena in our apartment increased in frequency and intensity. When we found the door to that apartment unlocked, we investigated and found electronic equipment in the kitchen, which shared a common wall with our

bedroom, as well as in the hall closet. Phil recognized some of the devices as ham radio equipment and tape recorders. When we eventually moved, Phil stated that he was going to miss the little air spirits that visited our apartment because they would not move to the house that we rented.

We experienced only a limited slice of the wide spectrum of supernatural experience, but it opened our minds to the possibility that, as Shakespeare wrote, “There are more things in Heaven and Earth than are dreamt of in your philosophy”.

From flashing lights to Men in Black, Keel covered the subject matter with a reporter’s objectivity, and Mothman gets a fair review. Keel’s work includes exploration of the longstanding and ongoing government surveillance of ordinary people who just happen to experience the extraordinary – as did Phil and I. While several explanations for these phenomena can be proposed, we have been unable to settle upon any interpretation as the correct one. These matters remain enigmatic, mysterious, and fascinating.

EDITOR'S NOTE

I first came across John Keel's work in the early 1990s. When I read The Mothman Prophecies, my life was altered. I had grown up amidst the Mothman craze in West Virginia in the late 1960s, but few people there had heard of Keel or his Mothman book (which didn't come out until 1975 and was barely publicized in West Virginia). When finally confronted with it, Keel's reportage confirmed to me much of what I had already suspected about my "unusual" childhood. I knew that several family members of mine, and many friends and neighbors, had seen strange entities and craft in Pleasant Dell – a spattering of houses in a secluded meadow high above the riverside hamlet of "Mound" (today called "North Charleston" and/or "Cross Lanes"). I had seen a couple of strange things there myself.

Above Pleasant Dell loomed the misty summit of "Bird Mountain," where one can still today see extremely large vultures and – when conditions are right – Mothman. One can still find neighbors along the roadway that crosses Bird Mountain (Woodward Drive) reporting bizarre, anomalous events. The Kanawha River Valley, home to George Washington, Daniel Boone, Charles Manson, and the family of Mark Twain, was once filled with thousands of Indian burial mounds and large, unusual earthworks that referenced the mathematics of the Great Pyramid at Giza. During the first half of the 20th century, the Kanawha Valley became known as the "chemical capital of the world," and was given the moniker "The Chemical Valley."

Local legends speak of strange emanations that come from these mound areas along the Kanawha (called "The River of the Dead" by the Shawnee) and its tributaries, the Elk, Pocatalico, and Coal Rivers. (The village of Mound straddles all three of these rivers' confluences with the Kanawha.) Most of these once-sacred areas are now covered with petrochemical plants, lending a spooky aura to the interplay between ancient myth and high-tech science. This clash of paranormal "magic" with corporate "conspiracy" has been at the core of my research into Mothman, UFOs, and the brilliant work of John Keel.

In his work, John Keel captured the brooding essence not only of Pt. Pleasant, WV (an hour's drive from Pleasant Dell), but also of that cosmic "nonlocal"

locale where distortions of time and space occur. It is a very complicated area, and I would have gotten nowhere in my research without Keel. (Most of my research has been personal – just trying to make sense of things that actually happened to me and to people I have known all of my life and trust.) I can personally vouch for the fact that many of the unbelievable scenarios Keel discusses did, in fact, happen.

And I am reasonably certain that the paranormal events and conspiratorial scenarios that happened in Pt. Pleasant and Pleasant Dell are connected. Mothman had more than one nest, and so did the spooks. (The X-Files television series did a good job of describing this secret intersection of the supernatural and the supertechnical in West Virginia.) We had real CIA, FBI, and NSA agents living in, or regularly visiting, our neighborhood, and we also saw just about every strange entity one can imagine: Mothman, aliens, ghosts, flying saucers, Bigfoot, Men in Black (MIB), the Virgin Mary, black panthers, and "intelligent orbs."

I first met Keel in September 2003, at the unveiling of the Mothman statue in Pt. Pleasant, WV. The weather was beautiful that weekend, and he and I were able to spend some quality time driving around or exploring on foot. Often accompanying us were two enthusiastic Mothman buffs, the Frick brothers (John and Tim), and Harriet Plumbrook, a Mothman witness I have known since early childhood. Harriet comes from a family of highly psychic West Virginians who have been recruited for government intelligence work for at least three generations. (Harriet has the same marks on her neck as Agent Scully in X-Files, and is a "medical intuitive" – someone who can read people's medical conditions and personal histories just by meeting them or "tuning into" them remotely.)

When Harriet and I get together, strange things always happen; windows and doors start opening by themselves, weird things are seen, and prophetic dreams and visions occur. Likewise, when I get together with the Fricks (who have tirelessly researched Mothman for well over a decade), nearby electrical items burn out, odd messages come across the radio, and Men in Black in unmarked vans come to let us know they are watching. Unusual phone calls periodically come to us (often simultaneously), as they came to Keel years before. When Keel and all of us got together that weekend in 2003, it seemed to create a supernova of paranormal energy.

Our visit with Keel sparked a flood of paranormal phenomena that lasted several years, up until Keel's death. The synchronicities were so stunning that I began to write primarily about that subject and how it might play into the UFO and Mothman phenomena. My basic discovery was that synchronicity can be used as a research tool, and that the psychic powers associated with Mothman and "natural" UFOs can be harnessed for good – for creative purposes or for healing. Through Keel's advice and inspiration, I was able to expound enough on the matter that an entire new field of research came into being: "synchromysticism" (also known as "synchroconspiracy"). This idea of utilizing synchronicity and psychic ability greatly intrigued Keel. He was, I think, trying to come up with ways to help save the world from its imminent destruction – by us.

This concern for Earth and humanity was in evidence when I asked Keel why he had bothered to come and investigate Mothman and the humble hill folk of the area. (If I had not had personal experience with the phenomenon myself, I am not sure I would have researched it at all.) Keel's response was that he came to help people understand what might be going on. He cared about people, and had genuine concern for what the darker aspects of the phenomenon could potentially do. (As you read through this book, these dangers will become clearer.)

Keel was definitely on his toes when he was in Mothman country. He could never fully anticipate when he might be hounded either by the phenomenon itself, or by some secret agent or MIB. (For instance, a likely CIA asset signed books next to him that weekend; I think only Keel and I knew it.) And the fact that Keel could never really figure out the Mothman riddle only added to the tension. Keel really didn't have an answer for it, and it bothered him. Jokingly, I told him I would help him figure Mothman out, since I had met the creature once or twice. He didn't laugh, but got serious, and asked me to look into myself – to look at why I was obsessed with Mothman. There was a definite gravity to what he said. It seemed like this was the most important thing he wanted say to me.

And it was great advice. I did what Keel said, and eventually worked through many of my issues. (Some of these issues had arisen because my father had died somewhat mysteriously – perhaps at the hands of the MIB – when I was twelve years old.) Luckily, in 2012, I completed my 11-year study on Mothman without having gone crazy in the process. Along the way, Keel warned me

about several things that might happen if I continued my exploration, and he was right on most counts. The nice thing about this was that his warnings prepared me for certain things that had to happen in order for me to fulfill a key purpose in my life. It wasn't that I needed to change direction or avoid deep questions; it was that I needed a better idea of what was around the corner as I kept plowing ahead. Keel was, in a way, perhaps channeling the Garuda, who is said to help humans stabilize personal advances along the path of life. As one of my Buddhist mentors used to say, "Illumination is a continuing process, and the Garuda provides support for that process." In old Appalachian church parlance, the Garuda might be said to "keep you from backsliding."

I was able to communicate directly with Keel for two or three years after the 2003 Mothman statue unveiling. It was always a great pleasure to get an email or call from him, since you knew some funny jokes would be coming your way. It was this congenial part of Keel that drew people to him. In the case of our local Mothman hunting team, Keel's calming influence seemed to solidify us as a group. We all went through some hard times. When you are experiencing poltergeists, missing time, and doppelgangers, things tend to get weird. All kinds of stresses crop up, and these stresses compete with the unusual phenomena already in place. Because of John Keel's wit and lightheartedness, all of us got through it in one piece, overcoming several emotional upheavals and disagreements. John Keel was, in a sense, a healer (although he would never admit this).

After a couple of years of discussing theories and ideas with Keel (such as the book you now hold in your hands), he dropped out of the pubic sphere and entered senior-living facilities. It became difficult for anyone to contact him. I put the project on hold rather than bug him about it further. But I always remembered what he had said when I first broached the idea of doing a new Mothman book. Rather than write something new, he suggested we reprint his old magazine articles, many of which touched on what had happened in West Virginia. Keel suggested that there were "technical details" in them that would counter the bogus explanations favored by the media. It almost sounded like he felt his work had been suppressed by third parties – that the scientific parts had been separated from the witness accounts, in order to make it harder to figure out what he had discovered. Once I started paying attention, I realized he was right.

So, I did as Keel suggested. After his death, I collected as many of his old

articles as I could, and added them to the material he had already given me. Most of these articles have not seen the light of day since they were originally written almost 50 years ago. In them, I found many interesting tidbits that shed new light on the UFO "problem," particularly regarding the deadly MIB. Some passages seem coded, in fact, so that two messages are sent – one to mollify the ufonauts and the MIB, the other to clue us in to the secret truth. Over time, I put together a long text that (hopefully) places the Mothman events into this larger, somewhat conspiratorial perspective. This text was split into two volumes, the first of which is this book, Flying Saucer to the Center of Your Mind.

One technical note… Keel sometimes used blanket terminology (like "UFO" or "flying saucer") when describing slightly different situations. He didn't always parse out whether he was discussing a natural "diamond light" UFO, or a secret craft built by the government or some defense firm. This kind of generalizing cannot be helped, especially when there are so many possibilities involved. So, in traversing Flying Saucer to the Center of Your Mind, I urge the reader to keep in mind the fact there seem to be two basic kinds of UFO phenomena: 1) "natural" or Earth-generated phenomena found within nature (i.e. "intelligent lights," "orbs," "energy balls," and attendant psychic phenomena); and 2) "synthetic" phenomena (i.e., manmade craft or effects created purposely by humans).

This natural/unnatural polarity exists in most "paranormal" phenomena. But it is actually more of a spectrum, or continuous loop (occasionally referred to by Keel as "The Great Phonograph in the Sky"). Sometimes, manmade devices and practices cause "natural" paranormal phenomena to happen, even though a different, synthetic effect was initially sought. And this can work in reverse, too, as it did with Nikola Tesla – who got his technological ideas through paranormal means.

There is also a third category, which readily crosses over into the other two: the induced UFO experience. This is where the percipient lapses into a trance and imagines an involved experience with a UFO, flying saucer, or entity (either "humanoid" or "creature") that did not actually happen in everyday reality. This can occur naturally (through stimulation from natural "geomagnetic" factors) or synthetically (through electromagnetic signaling from manmade sources, or through direct "brainwashing"). In certain synthetic "alien" abductions (i.e. "MILABS"), it is not uncommon for the victim's

assault at the hands of human experimenters to be replaced with a memory of abduction by "ETs." One can also have an induced UFO experience by seeing a manmade saucer that one mistakenly thinks is from outer space.

There are other permutations, of course, but I will let John Keel explain them. I have great respect and admiration for Keel's writing ability, and in only just a few cases did I add parenthetical material or make minor changes to clarify the possible confusions mentioned above. Most edits were typographical, and were only necessary because magazine editors had retyped and edited the material prior to publication.

I hope I have responsibly carried out Keel's wish to republish these previously suppressed secrets. Perhaps they will now be fully understood. Hopefully the methodologies expounded upon here will help us gain a clearer view of the mysterious and inexplicable universe surrounding us and, at times, emanating from us.

-Andrew B. Colvin

FOREWORD: THE GOLDEN BOY BY GRAY BARKER

Shortly after I arrived in New York for a recent saucer convention, I shook hands with John Keel. We immediately fell into "shop talk" or, more properly, "saucer talk" about the latest events in Pt. Pleasant, where people were still seeing "things," even after the Silver Bridge collapse.

I was not only impressed by Keel's UFO theories, but also genuinely liked the man, especially his sardonic wit. When you could draw it out of him, this changed to a warm, friendly humor. Also, Keel had done me many favors during my investigation of the Point Pleasant "Mothman" cases in 1966-67, giving me much information he had uncovered.

"This is wild," he told me, "but I know these people. I have no reason to doubt them." He related the strange circumstances.

Recently, three different persons, whom he had contacted in Pt. Pleasant by phone, had complained that their files of clippings about the Mothman sightings and other phenomena had mysteriously disappeared – in one case, from a locked file cabinet.

"I really have a good one," I replied. "I doubt if you will 'buy' it, as Long John Nebel would say, but I think it fits into some of your (Garuda) theories."

It was one of the weirdest Mothman sightings I had run across, even during my earlier and extensive investigation. But the witness, the Fox boy, had vowed it was true. Though I had only heard the account recently, it had happened during January of 1967, a couple of months after the first Mothman sighting.

Russell Fox, 16, and two other teenagers, Richard Nutter and Mike Cain, went hunting in a wooded area at Leon, WV, near Pt. Pleasant. They had their dogs with them. Russ wore a new hunting jacket. Although he had received nothing for Christmas from his father (estranged from the family and living in Florida), the jacket had arrived for his birthday. It made up for the lack of a Christmas present, though he would much rather see his dad than get something from him through the mail.

It must have cost a lot of money, though. Mike and Dickey were greatly impressed by the jacket. They examined all the pockets, and Russ felt like a hero. "Trying out" the jacket was the main reason they had gone out. They stuffed it full of shells, flashlights, and some sandwiches. To show his generosity, Russ let each of the two wear it for a short period.

They sighted the unusual creature at the old Perkins barn, part of an abandoned farm complex, now overgrown with weeds and saplings.

Immediately, they thought of "Mothman." Mothman was a huge bird that walked and waddled in a kind of sideways motion.

The dogs took off after it. But upon close approach, they halted, bayed for a few moments, and then ran back to the boys, whining. As they tried to "sic" the dogs on the creature again, it ran into the decrepit structure. They debated whether they should follow it inside.

Russ loaded the shotgun, hoping to kill the thing. They crept up to the building. A sagging door, open only by a crack and resting on rusting hinges, confronted them.

"We got a feeling of extreme fright. I have never felt anything like that before," Russ said. Mike backed him up and stood close to the door. But Dickey, the youngest of the three, retreated a few yards.

Mike held the flashlight, and Russ inserted the barrel of his shotgun into the crack of the door. He slowly drew it back, as the complaining hinges creaked. The nervous beam from Mike's hand disclosed a peculiar sight.

Half squatting in the corner, with one large wing folded across the manger, was a huge, grayish, birdlike creature. The light caught the eyes, which were large and glowing. Mike's hand was so unsteady that it was hard to get a good look at the thing.

"Hold her steady while I get a bead on it," Russ whispered. When the flashlight again picked out the creature, Russ got his first clear look at it – over the bead of the barrel.

It was not a monster. It definitely was a bird, though huge, almost as large as a man. Indeed, its torso reminded him somewhat of a man in circus garb, though he could make out large, beautiful feathers covering the entire body.

The thing made no move to counterattack. Instead, it crouched there, helpless it seemed, waiting for whatever he was to do to it. He did not want to pull the trigger. Had it been running, or attacking one of the other boys, he would have done so joyfully; but now, he just couldn't…

"Then, something came over me, as if this thing hypnotized me," Russ told me.

> I threw down the shotgun. Mike screamed and dropped the flashlight. The barn was inky darkness, but I found myself walking, inch-by-inch, toward the creature. I took off my new jacket; I don't know why. I held the jacket out to it, or rather where I presumed it to be crouching.
>
> Finally, I just dropped the jacket and stood there in the darkness. Suddenly a glow lit up in the barn. Instead of the bird, I saw another boy there, about my age. He was almost naked. He had on a kind of jockstrap or loincloth, like in Tarzan comics. He looked like he was made out of gold!
>
> The glow around him got brighter. He was still crouching there, in the same place, only now the "bird" was gone. Instead, this golden boy straightened up and looked at me. Then, he looked at his feet where the jacket was. He picked it up and held it up in front of him – not as if he was covering his nakedness, but more like he was cold, or that he was holding it close, in memory of my father (like I had done when I first got it).
>
> Before he vanished – and that's what he did – I swear to god, this boy started bawling and crying. I could definitely see the tears running down his face. They looked like gold, just like his body!

Keel and I moved to the door to avoid the crowd. We stepped outside for some fresh air before he spoke:

> You wouldn't be in on this, Gray, and I don't think it was a hoax, because of FCC regulations. You'll swear I'm making this up, but I am not. I was listening to the first hour of the Long John Nebel Show last night. Remember when Nebel asked you to quickly sum up the case of Al Bender and his visitation by the

> Men in Black? I swear, as soon as you began answering his question, a "skip signal" came in and interrupted the (powerful) WNBC signal! It was some station in the South. Whoever was talking had a decided Southern accent.

Later, other listeners to the same program would report the same thing. I looked at Keel. There was a worried expression on his face, and his earlier humor had completely vanished.

> There's something going on, and it is serious. I think I have some of the answers – enough of them to begin to realize what a terrifying situation we are faced with. Gray, I think the UFO syndrome of the 1950s and 60s has been the "beginning of the end." I think "they" are ready for their next step. Who knows, maybe they have already taken us over.

I recalled a statement John had made in Operation Trojan Horse (which sounded almost comforting compared to the political conspiracy he was now implying existed at high levels):

> Our first conclusion is that UFOs originate from beyond our own timeframe or time cycle. Our second conclusion is that the source has total foreknowledge of human events, and even of individual lives. Since time and space are not absolutes (although they seem to be to us), these two conclusions are compatible.

It was one of many extremely quotable and cogent paragraphs written by Keel, in what may be the most important UFO book in a decade…

Keel's "paraphysical hypothesis" is that "many flying saucers seem to be nothing more than a disguise for some hidden phenomenon…"

Keel points out that, until 1848, a religious frame of reference was constantly employed by the phenomenon. But as man's technology improved, and many religious beliefs were discarded, the phenomenon was obliged to update its manifestations and establish a new frame of reference. The phantom armies and angels so frequently reported in the past were replaced by transmogrifications that appeared to match man's own technological achievements.

Within this framework, Keel shed new light on the incredible "dirigible" flap of the 1890s, witnessed by thousands of reliable people. Occupants of the clumsy craft often landed, conversed with people, and purchased food and supplies from them.

The pilots told witnesses during these contacts that the ships were terrestrial, and had been built by mysterious inventors. In many ways, the pilots of these craft were similar to the "ufonauts" of today…

In his various books and magazine articles, Keel has given us new insights into the UFOs, USOs (unidentified submerged objects), Men in Black, and hairy monsters. He even covers the tangled, often-overlooked subject of unidentified airplanes and helicopters, which appear in many areas during or after UFO flaps (without conventional numbers on their wings, tails, or fuselages).

At night, the cockpits of these unidentified aircraft are brilliantly illuminated (a distinct abnormality, for such would interfere with pilot vision). These mystery planes have been reported to hover, fly without making noise, and navigate close to the ground during severe rain and snowstorms. Frighteningly, they tend to turn up in areas where animals have been found mutilated.

Like the rest of the mysteries he studies so keenly, Keel believes most of these craft are only temporary constructs (or else have the power to become invisible or "cloaked").

They pop into our frame of reference from somewhere we can oversimplify as "another dimension." They can be completely solid as long as they stay here, and then pop right out again – back into the mysterious realm from whence they came…

A most intriguing subject… And maybe something "they" don't want you to know about.

(From Saucer News, 1970-72)

INTRODUCTION: FIRST AND LAST WORDS

I recently worked for a year in Washington, D.C., where I served as a special consultant to the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare (DHEW), which includes the Bureau of Radiological Health and numerous other agencies working in fields allied to our particular (ufological) interests. I worked directly under DHEW Secretary Eliot Richardson (now Secretary of Defense) and had occasion to meet and interview many top officials, extending all the way to the White House.

It was interesting to discover how many people working in Washington have had UFO sightings and experiences. Unfortunately, very few were able to give us permission to use their names, for obvious reasons. I was privileged to be able to investigate many of the classic rumors while working inside the government. A number of my friends were in the upper echelons of NASA, the Air Force, the Pentagon, and other organizations that had been connected with the UFO mess during the hectic 1960s period. We were able to review a number of interesting documents that have never been released to the press or the public.

Overall, we merely confirmed the conclusion already outlined in my books and articles. That is, "Project Bluebook" was only a half-baked public relations effort, without proper funding or serious intent – almost tongue-in-cheek. The responsible officials expected it to produce negative results. Certain employees of the CIA and the Defense Department were peripherally involved in the project, and so it "self-destructed."

A fruitful UFO investigation would probably cost in the neighborhood of $25 million, and there would be no way to justify the cost to Congress or the public. Over the years, various small projects have taken place within obscure agencies, under disguised budgets, involving personnel who literally had nothing better to do. The results of these projects were largely negative, mostly because they were just boondoggles. The personnel involved didn't know what the hell they were doing (not unusual in Washington).

In 1966, Dr. J. Allen Hynek made an effort to find government support for a $2 million UFO project he had planned. Other scientists have submitted proposals over the years for UFO projects costing from $25,000 to many millions. The government actually did spend several million dollars on UFO research in the early 1950s, but we were never able to pin down the exact figure.

Some early NASA research was also involved. Again, the results were negative. Top military leaders of the 1950s (e.g., Vandenberg, Doolittle, Twining) actually had a deep interest in psychic phenomena and advanced the conclusion that the UFO manifestations were closely related to psychic manifestations, and were therefore almost impossible to investigate.

Once it was established that UFOs were intangible (they appeared and disappeared as instantly as ghosts), official interest dissipated. The flap of 1966 aroused Congress, however, and public pressure led the Air Force to shop around for a university willing to conduct an impartial investigation. After several major universities rejected the Air Force's proposition, the project was given, somewhat reluctantly, to Colorado. The real purpose of the project was to "get all the nuts off the Air Force's back," as one Pentagon officer put it.

It is extremely unlikely that there will ever be an official UFO study project. If another 1966-type flap occurs, the Pentagon will simply dust off the Condon Report.

There have been (and are) certain small projects concerned with the medical and psychological effects on the witnesses. These are heavily disguised, however, and no results have been – or will be – published in the foreseeable future. Public exposure would result in an outcry from those members of Congress who try to watchdog agency budgets.

We could not find any evidence of any kind indicating direct CIA involvement on the scale long rumored in UFO circles. Offices of the U.S. Navy (NSA, NRO, ONI, etc.) have been more involved in UFO research than the CIA or Air Force!

As we have stressed for several years, the UFO situation is less real than the believers can understand. UFO manipulations are primarily diversions meant to conceal the real nature of the phenomenon, and to generate propaganda for the extraterrestrial concept. Or, as Sir Victor Goddard phrased it a few years

ago, they "indulge an inveterate and continuing technological urge towards materialistic progress."

The effectiveness of the comparatively few ET propagandists and evangelists is obvious. They were responsible for the pressures that led the Air Force to waste $500,000 of the taxpayers' money on the abortive Colorado project.

More importantly, they have led a large part of the public to believe that every odd light in the sky is a spaceship from some other planet.

-John Keel

(From Anomaly magazine #9, June 1973)

> "The preposterous hypothesis we have come to is that at one time human nature was split in two: an executive part called a god, and a follower part called a man. Neither part was conscious. (This is almost incomprehensible to us, since we are self-conscious.) When some brand new situation would occur, our 'bicameral' man would not do what you and I do, that is, quickly and efficiently swivel our consciousness over to the matter, and narratize out what to do. He would have to wait for his bicameral voice – with the stored-up admonitory wisdom of his life – which would tell him, nonconsciously, what to do.
>
> "But what were such auditory hallucinations like? The voices take any and every relationship to the individual. They converse, threaten, curse, criticize, consult, admonish, console, mock, command, or sometimes simply announce everything that's happening… The only extensive study was done in the last century in England… Russians had twice as many hallucinations on average. Brazilians had even more… Since the advent of chemotherapy, the incidence of hallucinatory patients is much less than it once was…
>
> "Hallucinating patients are more friendly, less defensive, more likeable, and have more positive expectancies toward others in the hospital than nonhallucinating patients. And it is possible that even when the effect is apparently negative, hallucinated voices

may be helpful to the healing process… Of immense importance here is the fact that the nervous system of a patient makes simple perceptual judgments of which the patient's 'self ' is not aware… Hallucinations must have some innate structure in the nervous system underlying them. We can see this clearly by studying those who have been profoundly deaf since birth. For even they can – somehow – experience auditory hallucinations…

"One 32-yr. old woman, born deaf, who was full of self-recrimination about a therapeutic abortion, claimed she heard accusations from God. Another, a 50-yr. old congenitally deaf woman, heard supernatural voices that proclaimed her to have occult powers. One of my schizophrenic subjects had been sitting in a car for a long time. A blue car coming along the road suddenly, oddly, turned rusty brown, then grew huge gray wings and slowly flapped over a hedge and disappeared… Visual hallucinations may be fitted into the real environment. Usually when visualizations occur with voices, they appear as a shining light, or cloudy fog."

-Julian Jaynes, The Origin of Consciousness in the Breakdown of the Bicameral Mind

"I would like to bring out points that, in my estimation, prove a strong case in favor of the Nazi theory of UFOs. First are the balls of light that our flyers reported throughout Germany during WWII. Later, a few were seen in Japan, but none were reported elsewhere. No balls of light were reported during WWI, nor during the period after WWII.

"Second, a statement was made by the head of the German admiralty in 1940 that they were building a 'Shangri-La' for Hitler, where he would be able to retreat in the event of defeat. As the German submarines were able to remain underwater for two weeks, they could have been well able to transport scientists and equipment to South America. They established their first base there and, later, in the Antarctic.

"Third, a speech was made by one of Hitler's top men about three months before the collapse of the German army, as to the fantastic machine they were building in an underground factory, which apparently the Allies believed. They made frantic efforts to break up the German army immediately. The fact that the Allies found nothing that they had not already known would indicate that whatever the Germans were building had already been completed and removed.

"Then, in 1947, the flying saucers began to appear. All of them seemed to come from the south, along the West Coast. Then, the U.S. became very interested in establishing a base and exploring the Antarctic… If my theories are correct, the Nazis have utilized a new form of power to build tremendous 'space ships'."

-Harry E. Webb, letter to Saucer News, 1969

"On the same day that the Condon UFO Report had gone to the National Academy of Sciences, one of those apparently crackpot, but nonetheless weirdly compelling reports of saucers-from-Earth came out of Rome, in a book by Renato Vesco. In his book, Interception Without Shooting, he claims that flying saucers are conceived and built by English technicians deep in the woods of Canada.

"Vesco said that astonishing German scientific experiments immediately before and during WWII produced more than V-1 and V-2 rockets. Had the war lasted another year, they would have given Hitler an enormous quantity of fantastic arms in the aeronautical field. Many were about to be mass-produced when the war ended. The plans fell into the hands of the Allies and enabled their scientists to conclude similar but 'more backward' experiments, he says.

"The Germans were developing the 'Feuerball' (fireball), a circular flying machine propelled by the flat jet engine and aimed at interfering with electronic devices on many planes, and

the ‘Kugelblitz’ (meaning “round lightning”), a circular intercepting jet fighter. Where are these plans today? Mr. Vesco says they went to Britain and then to Canada.

“The German experiments were continued from there, and the result was ‘flying saucers.’ He says saucers are much superior to traditional planes. Britain, he adds, has spent enormous sums on undisclosed aeronautical experiments, and various Prime Ministers have approved expenditures without giving the slightest hint of what they were for. The U.S. has done its best to get in on the secret but, at present, finds itself in a ‘policy of waiting’.”

-Gray Barker, Saucer News, 1969

“The UFO mystery is a complex matter, and has many solutions, each of which represent only a part of the total answer. I believe it will be many years before we have the total answer. I know that there must be something to this ‘Men in Black’ business, because I have photographed one of them myself, and I have been involved in other such cases (or heard about them from people whom I consider absolutely reliable). As to who these men are, where they come from, and why they are here, I cannot answer. But these men do exist, and some of the events are quite real, though others are no doubt made up by people who want to ‘get in on the act’ and achieve free publicity, etc.

“There is at least one part of the UFO mystery that I solved several years ago, and this must be the part to which you referred to in your last letter. Unfortunately, it is the one thing I could not reveal, even in confidence. I can only tell you that this part of the answer is shocking and frightening (at least to the average person), though it would be well understood by those trained in the appropriate scientific discipline.

“In other words, it does not involve anything beyond our present state of science and technology. The main reason that I cannot reveal it is that it would not be believable by any researcher.

Were I to tell you, you would simply question my data or my motives, and would not accept the information I offered. This is why the matter is something that 'cannot be told' (as various researchers have stated), and which must therefore, by the very nature of the thing, be learned by each individual researcher for himself."

-Jim Moseley, letter to physicist Robert J. Oppenheimer, 1969

"The death of Col. Maddox on the Silver Bridge should serve to warn you and the WBAB woman [Jaye Paro]. Do not attempt to interfere with the Kelson family. Their problems are none of your business.

"We are always watching, Mr. Keel, and your people in Washington cannot help you. Mr. Scott and the boy on Long Island went to the FBI and made up many lies about the men from Saucer News. The man in Clarksburg [Gray Barker] is in serious trouble now, and you will be, too, if you do not watch your step.

"If you want to stay out of trouble, do not attempt to speak to the Kelsons again, and warn Miss WBAB to do likewise. It would also be wise for you to forget about the Riverhead case. These matters do not concern you.

"You have no allies. We have many. Col. Maddox found out."

-Anonymous note left under Keel's door, Dec. 30, 1967 (with letterhead of "the International Bankers")

MEMO TO ALL UFOLOGISTS – NOT FOR PUBLICATION

Subject: Increase in "Men in Black" Activity

Since the first of February, there has been an alarming increase in the activities of the "Men in Black," and it is now apparent that "they" are deliberately carrying out actions that make them conspicuous and attract attention. This is in direct contrast to their previous methods.

Since “they” do seem to be coming out from undercover and making a bid for attention, we should be especially suspicious and cautious in our investigations, and in our public statements on these activities. In other words, we should counteract their activities by adopting a position of silence.

Both the local police and FBI should be immediately informed of any MIB activity in your area. The identity and location of the witnesses involved should be protected, and should be withheld from the local press.

This is a very serious situation. I have very substantial reasons for believing that the current explosion of MIB activity is directly related to a forthcoming national crisis. The crisis has been developing over a long period of time. The numerous hoaxes, deceptions, and seeming meaningless incidents inherent in the UFO phenomenon have actually served to cover up the real situation.

It appears as if two groups of MIB are involved. One group is extremely dangerous. They have committed murder and arson on a broad scale, operating under the carefully constructed umbrella of ridicule and nonsense surrounding the UFO phenomenon. The second group is trying to focus our attention on the first group by imitating MIB activity through harmless interviews, presentation of obviously false credentials, etc. We must understand and appreciate the efforts of this second group, and learn to discriminate between the two.

Should you ever come into direct contact with any MIB, do not attempt to assault them, threaten them, anger them, or detain them. Appear to accept whatever credentials they offer. Do not under any circumstances enter their automobile or go anywhere alone with them. Do not give them any personal articles, photographs, or currency, and do not sign any forms or papers they may display.

-John A. Keel, March 15, 1968

> “In my early teens, I found that I could sometimes sense what other people were thinking. I assumed that everyone had this ability. Now and then, I encounter someone whose mind is actually vulnerable to my own. I not only sense what they are thinking, but I can project my own thoughts into their mind; they accept these thoughts as their own. In short, I can control that

person's mind on a modest scale.

"There are people who have this power to a very developed degree. They can control others, even from a great distance. It is probable that some world leaders, especially the evil ones like Hitler, possessed and exercised this ability. One famous Russian psychic could hand a railroad conductor a blank sheet of paper, and the conductor would punch it, thinking it was a ticket…

"Intercepting the thoughts and feelings of others is a meager accomplishment compared with the next item on the scale: precognition, the ability to see into the future. People with this ability are not just tuning into other human minds; their brains are somehow tuned to the superspectrum itself, and they are tapping the information stored in it. The future already exists in the superspectrum."

-John Keel, The Eighth Tower

CHAPTER 1

WHAT THE CIA IS NOT TELLING US ABOUT UFOS – MALE MAGAZINE, APRIL 1969

For nearly a generation, American "flying saucer" enthusiasts have been loudly accusing the Central Intelligence Agency of pilfering their mail, tapping their telephones, and ordering random UFO witnesses to keep their mouths shut. UFO-investigating organizations have tediously collected hundreds of intriguing cases in which reliable, honest American citizens have testified that they have been the victims of unusual harassment and even of physical threats by "agents" claiming to represent the U.S. government.

The apparent purpose of such tactics is to "suppress" information about "flying saucers." Behind all the circumstantial evidence and sworn testimony, there are strong suggestions that the blame for these harassments may actually be cleverly focused on the U.S. air force and the CIA by a third party.

There is mounting evidence that no known government agency takes the UFO "problem" seriously at all, but that another hidden group far behind the scenes is deliberately conducting a carefully planned campaign to spread confusion, suspicion, disbelief, and distrust in governmental institutions.

Public outcry was so great during the "flap" in 1966, and the organized UFO enthusiasts were so vociferous in their accusations against the air force and CIA, that the CIA actually broke its long silence and issued the following statement to the press on Oct. 11, 1966:

> It is indeed true that in the 1950s, the Central Intelligence Agency was actively studying the matter of Unidentified Flying Objects because at that time, there was no way of knowing whether such objects might be originating from sources overseas.
>
> All materials concerning UFOs were subsequently declassified and made available to scientists, scholars, and other interested persons. Materials which were not declassified had nothing to do with UFOs, but with the organization and methods of the CIA.

> The matter of UFOs currently is the responsibility of the Air Force, and CIA has no interest either in building up or debunking any information or views concerning UFOs.

This statement was not widely published at the time, and the UFO enthusiasts regarded it as nothing more than another "government whitewash." But as experienced investigators such as science writer Lloyd Mallan plunged into the UFO controversy, they uncovered many bewildering aspects that had been overlooked by the hardcore UFO enthusiasts. For one thing, men dressed in military uniforms (usually Air Force uniforms) were turning up at UFO sites and ordering the witnesses to remain silent about what they had seen. Several common factors emerged in these cases. These "Air Force officers" often arrived at the witnesses' homes hours – or even minutes – after their sightings, before these witnesses had a chance to report their observations to anyone. Invariably, these "officers" arrived in chauffeur-driven Cadillacs.

Genuine Air Force officers don't ride around in Cadillacs, but use assembly-line Chevys and Fords from the base motor pool. In several cases, these saucer "officers" carried sidearms and actually threatened the witnesses with them. In a recent instance, one such "officer" flourished a German Luger instead of a general issue, U.S.-made automatic.

Would any responsible Air Force officer actually threaten an American taxpayer with a firearm just because he or she had seen an unidentified flying object?

The Pentagon became very concerned over the nationwide activities of these mysterious "Air Force officers" and on March 1, 1967, Lt. General Hewitt T. Wheless, USAF Assistant Vice Chief of Staff, issued a letter to all commands on the subject of "Impersonations of Air Force officers." It advised all military and civilian personnel "and particularly Information Officers and UFO Investigating Officers who hear of such reports" to notify military intelligence immediately.

As usual, the UFO buffs regarded this as still another "whitewash." But the fact is that the FBI has actively been investigating a number of these cases, and several independent civilian UFO investigators have encountered not only Air Force officer impersonators, but also "mystery men" dressed in police uniforms and driving police cars. Efforts to check out the identity of these men,

trace their license numbers, etc., led to a dead end. In several cases, the license numbers on these cars had never been issued.

To understand the government's basic position towards the UFO phenomenon, we must review the general UFO situation of the past 30 years or so. Researchers all over the world have been digging into books, newspapers, and scientific journals, and many surprising patterns have been uncovered. These patterns indicate that UFO activity has been occurring repeatedly and consistently in the same areas, year after year, long before the first "flying saucer scare" of June 1947 led to a general public awareness of the "flying saucer" mystery. The following chronology summarizes the heavily documented evidence now available to serious researchers:

> 1933-34 – December-January: Unidentified aircraft appeared nightly over Finland, Sweden, and England. A small "war scare" resulted. Explanation offered: "smugglers and spies."
>
> 1937-38: Worldwide UFO sightings, with numerous reports from Africa and from ships at sea, particularly in the northern latitudes and around Scandinavia.
>
> 1942: A formation of UFOs appeared over Los Angeles, CA. Anti-aircraft batteries opened fire, without effect. A congressional inquiry into this incident was launched, but no conclusions were reached.
>
> 1943-45: Many well-documented UFO sightings by military pilots and ships all over the world. Both Axis and Allied pilots reported seeing discs over Europe and the Pacific. They were dubbed "foo fighters." Such reports were turned over to military intelligence.
>
> 1945 – December: Six planes and 27 men disappeared completely in clear weather off the coast of Florida in the area now known as the "Bermuda Triangle." An extensive search by land, air, and sea failed to find any trace of the missing craft. UFOs had been sighted in the area.
>
> 1946 – January: President Truman forms the Central Intelligence Group, forerunner of the CIA.

1946 – April: Congressional hearings are held to determine the fate of the 27 men who disappeared off the Florida coast. Relatives of the missing men were flown to Washington and sworn to secrecy. No definite conclusions were published.

1946 – July: Thousands of "ghost rockets" and mysterious flying objects suddenly appeared over Sweden and Scandinavia. There were many reliable observations by military men and high officials. The Swedish government later released a strong statement attesting to the reality of the phenomenon. The sightings spread throughout Europe but received almost no publicity in the U.S., except for a few random "human interest" stories. Within a month, USAF General James Doolittle arrived in Stockholm, Sweden, allegedly to "conduct an investigation along with Swedish authorities."

1947: Numerous sightings of circular aircraft began to appear in isolated American newspapers in the spring, but the subject did not receive public attention until Kenneth Arnold reported seeing flying discs near Mt. Rainier, WA on June 24th. Hundreds of sightings were published in the two weeks that followed. The "flying saucer" controversy was born, and the official Air Force investigation began. In Sept., the Air Technical Intelligence Center (ATIC) at Dayton, Ohio, sent a letter to the commanding general of the Air Force expressing the opinion that "flying saucers" were real, and that an all-out investigation should be launched.

1948 – January: ATIC began Project Sign, a concentrated, well-financed effort, manned by highly trained intelligence experts, began to collect and study all available UFO reports.

1948 – August: ATIC completed its initial study and drew up a "Top-Secret Estimate of the Situation." Their conclusion, according to the men who worked on it, was that the UFOs were real and were extraterrestrial. This report was delivered to Air Force Chief of Staff General Vandenberg. He rejected the report, declaring there was insufficient evidence to back it up, and that the government could not offer such a conclusion to the public

without an abundance of proof. Project Sign was dissolved. Military intelligence withdrew from open UFO research, and a group of second-string astronomers, college professors, and UFO enthusiasts set to work on Project Grudge. This was an alternate project meant to "explain away" the UFO phenomenon.

1949 – December: The Air Force issued the 600-page Project Grudge Report, which "explained" all UFO sightings as being delusions, hoaxes, and natural phenomena.

1950: UFO sightings continued and, although no government agency was supposed to be officially interested, mystery men claiming to represent the government turned up to "investigate" a number of the new cases. Their identity has never been ascertained.

1951: In September, protests from concerned scientists and industrialists forced the Air Force to re-establish a UFO project. This was Project Blue Book, headed by the late Capt. Edward Ruppelt.

1952: Ruppelt and his Blue Book team worked industriously to collect and analyze new UFO evidence. They carefully prepared charts and graphs of UFO activity, studied films, and investigated new sightings. There were many important UFO incidents in 1952, including the sudden appearance of many objects over Washington, D.C. in July. That year, the National Security Agency (NSA) was brought into being. Far more mysterious than the CIA, the NSA works with computers and elaborate electronic gear. It is headed by a physicist and a general (usually a radar specialist) working in tandem. It has become one of the most secret of all the "secret" agencies in Washington.

1953 – January: The CIA convened a blue-ribbon panel of scientists and CIA agents to examine Project Blue Book's findings and to settle upon a policy for handling future UFO information. Capt. Ruppelt and his men prepared their case carefully and spent four days presenting it to the CIA panel.

> These meetings undoubtedly shaped the course of government policy for 15 years to come. This was the real turning point. The panelists felt that the evidence was inadequate for any conclusive, positive governmental position. Since UFOs had already been around in great numbers for many years, it was likely that the reports of UFO sightings would include and could conceivably present a hazard by cluttering up official communications channels with endless reports of little importance. So the panel recommended a program for debunking the subject, and leading the public to disinterest. Project Blue Book was turned into nothing more than an understaffed public relations office dedicated to "explaining" and minimizing the importance of UFO sightings.
>
> 1953 – August: The Air Force issued its notorious Regulation 200-2 ordering all Air Force personnel to keep silent about UFO sightings and related matters. This censorship did not extend to other military branches, however. By the end of 1953, the official position was well-shaped and, gradually, the Air Force attitudes did influence other branches of the service.

The real questions – and answers – about the government's official UFO position are now buried in history. The men who formed those policies are now either dead or retired. Most of the documents from the earlier days have been destroyed or are lost forever in the vast catacombs of files in Washington, D.C.

By sifting the available public records in Washington, we have determined that there was high-level interest in the UFO phenomenon prior to Arnold's 1947 sighting. Furthermore, this interest was entirely isolated to intelligence specialists. Following standard intelligence procedure, they were quietly collecting and examining all of the available facts on the situation. The public didn't know about "flying saucers" and they hoped to keep it that way.

In June-July 1947, when "flying saucers" crashed into the nationwide headlines, the "secret" was out. The military machinery moved automatically, completely independent of the government agencies. The Air Force was responsible for protecting our skies, so they began to investigate. The men at ATIC worked hard and conscientiously and, after a long and careful study of

the evidence, drafted their Top-Secret Estimate of the situation. They knew they were presenting an outlandish hypothesis: the UFOs were "extraterrestrial." They were literally laying their careers on the line. They had to believe absolutely in their conclusion. They expected to be taken seriously but, instead, General Vandenberg threw the estimate back at them. If ATIC's appraisal was accurate in the sense that UFOs might be "alien" objects posing a potential threat – no matter how slight – to the United States, then Vandenberg's action was ill-considered. He removed the men best equipped to study and cope with the UFO "problem," and set up Project Grudge – an apparent whitewash.

Why?

Could it be that Gen. Vandenberg already knew something very important about the UFO phenomenon – something that the ATIC did not even suspect? Could it have been important to keep the Air Force in the dark? In other words, did he – and the CIA – want to keep the Air Force from finding out?

All of this indicates that this is exactly what happened. The intelligence officers at ATIC were convinced that UFOs were real. They were eager to learn more about them. But they were stopped before they went too far.

The whole charade was repeated again in 1953. Again, lower echelon officers in the Air Force had established a UFO investigating project – Project Blue Book. Again, hard-working men like Capt. Ruppelt did their best to figure out what was going on. Later, Capt. Ruppelt wrote a book, Report on Unidentified Flying Objects, which still stands as one of the best on the subject. In that book, he mentions a discussion with an unnamed scientist in an unnamed Washington agency early in June 1952. This scientist told Ruppelt flatly that a big "flap" would occur over either New York or Washington. A few weeks later, the sightings over Washington took place. The objects were picked up by radar, pursued by Air Force fighters, and viewed by hundreds of people on the ground. The point is: even in 1952, some scientists or group of scientists already understood the UFO patterns and were able to accurately predict a forthcoming flap.

Obviously, the government – or someone in government – knew a great deal about "flying saucers." And obviously they had no intention of ever letting this become public knowledge.

Ruppelt's busy technicians had to be stopped. So, in 1953, the CIA reviewed their findings, dismissed them, and laid the groundwork for the present government policy. The panel included many distinguished scientists, but it was only necessary for the CIA to insert a single "ringer" onto the panel – a man with orders to twist everything around convincingly enough so that the others would follow his lead and reject Ruppelt's evidence. Having accomplished this, the CIA's role in the UFO muddle was finished.

Since 1953, the Air Force's UFO "investigations" have been downright laughable. The annual UFO statistics issued by Project Blue Book are so carelessly assembled that the columns of figures haven't even been correctly added. Blue Book's "staff" of two officers (a sergeant and a secretary) labor to answer "kiddie mail" and hand out "explanations" of sightings with a total disregard for the reported facts.

For years, the UFO buffs and their organizations have battled with the Air Force and denounced the CIA. But it appears that Ruppelt, his predecessors, and his successors were merely pawns in some larger game involving the CIA (which has neither the authority nor the responsibility to investigate UFO incidents).

In a sense, the Air Force and the CIA have already told us a good deal by refusing to tell us anything. The problems are actually deeper and more complex than we can comprehend or accept.

PROJECT BETA: AN ANALYSIS OF REPORTS OF UNIDENTIFIED AERIAL OBJECTS (1996)

Although it has somehow escaped the notice of the major news media, the wave of UFO sighting reports in 1966 exceeded all other years. Local newspapers throughout the world recorded over 10,000 sightings. Of these, the U.S. Air Force received 1,060 for the year, or 10% of the total.

These sightings have been categorized by dates, locales, and other significant factors. Many of these reports consisted of vague descriptions of unusual flying lights, etc., and were discarded as "insufficient" for this study. A total of 7.3% of all collected sightings were classified as Type 1 (low-level objects well-described by reliable witnesses such as police officers, pilots, radar

technicians, etc.), and were selected as representative of the overall situation.

It was determined that all sightings tended to occur in groups or bunches, centered around specific days in specific months. These groupings are referred to as "flaps" (an Air Force term). For example, on March 30, 1966, extensive Type 1 sightings were recorded in South Carolina, Wisconsin, New Jersey, Iowa, Ohio, California, Long Island, and Michigan. While the sightings in Michigan were minor compared to the incidents in other states at the same time, only Michigan received national publicity.

A total of 20% of all 1966 Type 1 sightings took place on Wednesdays, while only 7% were reported on Tuesdays. Thursdays were the second most "popular" day for sightings, with 17% of the total.

The largest number of sightings was reported during the 4th week of March, the 4th week of July, the 3rd week in August, and the 3rd week in September. This pattern was established in 1964 and repeated in 1965-66. There was a massive flap in the 4th week of March 1967, but the data has not yet been analyzed. (A new precedent was set in 1967 when there was a large flap throughout the 3rd week of January.)

The largest single "flap" of 1966 took place on the evening of Aug. 16, between the hours of 9 and 11. So many reports were published for this flap that we have analyzed them separately. The sightings for that evening were concentrated in the states of Minnesota, Arkansas, Wisconsin, South Dakota, and New Jersey. Several auto pursuits were recorded that evening, and a number of pilots claim that a UFO touched down briefly at the Flying Cloud Airport outside of Minneapolis.

Overall, the most sightings in 1966 were recorded in the states of Ohio, Nebraska, Oregon, California, and Minnesota – in that order. However, UFO reports were published in all 50 states. As the intensity of the phenomenon increased, the number of published reports has declined. In many areas, residents now take "flying saucers" for granted, and no longer report them. In spot checks conducted in areas where local newspapers have not published any reports, we discovered large numbers of witnesses who had failed to report their observations to any authority.

On the basis of this study and my personal investigations in many areas, it appears that UFO activity is most intense in isolated, thinly populated sections

of the country. Places such as Kentucky and West Virginia, neither of which has any Air Force bases or large military installations, have had almost continuous UFO sightings since the summer of 1966.

If this were a purely psychological phenomenon, one would assume that the number of sightings would increase in areas where the population is larger. However, the reverse is true. Areas of dense population (with, therefore, a greater number of psychologically disturbed persons) produce the fewest reports.

If the UFOs were merely natural phenomena, such as bolides and meteors, reports on a given date would be distributed across several states, and all sightings would occur at approximately the same time. However, the geographical distribution of sightings, and notable time differences, tend to rule out this easy (and frequently used) explanation.

WHAT ARE THEY?

There is absolutely no evidence that UFOs are extraterrestrial or interplanetary in nature. All substances and "hardware" alleged to have come from UFOs have been composed of earthly materials. Since 1896, there have been 2,500 recorded cases in which witnesses have claimed to have seen the UFO pilots. In 92% of these cases, the observers claimed that the "ufonauts" were humanoid. The major differences were in size only.

Thus, these objects seem to be manufactured of earthly materials, and seem to be operated by people not too distant from ourselves. Furthermore, they seem to appear more frequently over the same areas, year after year. (Ohio led the country in 1952 and 1966.)

In thousands of well-documented cases since 1896, these objects have reportedly carried out maneuvers that indicated they were under intelligent control. There are now hundreds of cases in which law enforcement officers and other reliable witnesses claim that the objects responded to, and even returned, light signals flashed from the ground.

We conclude that the majority of the unidentified flying objects reported are manned vehicles of undetermined origin, operating illegally in our atmosphere, in order to transport personnel and material from one surface point to another

for an unknown purpose. This is a blatant violation of our airspace, as well as an open violation of all of our licensing and aircraft zoning laws.

NORTH AMERICA 1966: THE GREAT WAVE

During 1966, I traveled over ten thousand miles, visiting the areas of concentrated UFO reports and interviewing scores of ordinary citizens who suddenly found themselves living in a science-fiction nightmare. Something strange is happening in the United States. Rural dwellers are sitting in stunned silence around their kitchen tables after witnessing UFO landings, and glimpsing strange creatures, which they assume to be UFO occupants. Most of these people are reluctant to talk about what they have seen, and it is obvious that only a small percentage of these incidents are reported to the local authorities or to the press.

Newspapers across the country did, however, struggle valiantly to report on what was happening in their immediate vicinity. However, some were so inundated with UFO stories that they abandoned all pretense of being objective. Many, such as The Democrat-Herald of Albany, Oregon, dropped the terms “UFO” and “flying saucers” and began to refer openly to “spaceships from another world.” In one news clip after another, we find the chilling phrase: “He (or she) has been a changed person since he saw that thing the other night.” The press had begun to concentrate largely on the sober reports of police officers and sheriffs. The clipping in my files of March 1966 bear witness to this, for they name over 50 policemen and law enforcement officials who reported observing UFOs.

The most significant trend in 1966 was the fantastic number of low-level and touchdown reports. These came in from every state in the union, and many of the witnesses complained of eye ailments following a sighting. I interviewed a number of people while their eyes were still swollen, red, and watery. We now have many stories of UFOs pursuing people on the ground and coming directly up to the doors and windows of homes. It is almost as if they are singling out certain individuals and observing them closely…

Generally speaking, we can break the 1966 flap down into the following categories:

Geographical: Sightings that followed a geographical and chronological pattern along rivers and interstate highways, moving progressively from point to point along those features.

Technical: The usual pattern of sightings around technically interesting areas such as Air Force bases, arsenals, military installations of all kinds, chemical factories, power plants, dams, transformer stations, radio and TV antennae, etc.

"Monitoring" flights: Pursuits of automobiles, airplanes, and individuals on foot, plus hovering activities around individual homes.

Reservoir sightings: These continued on a large scale throughout the U.S. in 1966.

Landing and direct contact reports: There were more of these in 1966 than in any previous year.

Altogether, these thousands of reports mount up to an alarming picture. Perhaps they indicate that the UFOs are now engaged in a massive "final stage" of operations.

Tad Jones, the witness of the January 19th, 1966 landing outside of Charleston, West Virginia, reported that the object he saw had wheels. If this is true, then we have a new development that would suggest that the UFOs are going to abandon their old tripod-type landing gear, and replace it with something that will give them ground mobility.

My repeated visits to the Pentagon have convinced me that the USAF is not genuinely interested in this problem. They have made no real attempt to interfere with the UFO activity in the flap areas, and they have shown no real interest in the complaints from citizens living in those areas.

At the same time, I should add, I have not tried to keep my research secret, and I have not been approached by any agency or individual intent on hampering my efforts. The Air Force, NASA, and other official agencies have actually granted me limited cooperation and have, in fact, gone to considerable trouble to supply me with specific information when I have requested it. John Fuller recently told me that certain officers in the Pentagon actually encouraged his research. Fuller certainly paved the way for public acceptance of flying

saucers.

The intensive UFO activity seems to support APRO's theory that our population is now being rapidly prepared to accept the existence of UFOs and to deal emotionally with the fantastic social changes that their arrival is sure to foster.

CHAPTER 2

INVESTIGATING UFOS: PROBING A PHENOMENON WRAPPED IN MYSTERY – SAGA MAGAZINE, AUGUST 1977

"The average UFO report isn't worth the paper it's written on," an Air Force officer in the Pentagon told me back in 1966. At the time, I scoffed at the statement, assuming it was just part of the sinister conspiracy to downgrade and dismiss the UFO phenomenon. But gradually, I came to realize that the statement was painfully accurate. Few UFO reports, even today, contain enough substantive information for a valid analysis. The art of writing reports is still a puzzle to many civilian UFO investigators. The result is a flood of paper and red tape that tells us nothing whatsoever about the UFO witnesses themselves, and very little about the actual case being investigated. Before Project Blue Book was dismantled in 1969, Air Force investigators often dismissed baffling cases with the terse remark: "insufficient information."

A major part of the problem was created by the Air Force's own official questionnaire (form FTD 164), which was closely copied by most of the civilian UFO investigators and their various organizations. The form is practically worthless. It looked impressive in its seven-page format, but it was obviously designed by pilots and astronomers for a singular purpose: to extract only information that would make it possible to identify the "unknown" as a conventional object or mundane astronomical phenomenon. It asked the witness to make impossible estimates of speed, altitude, angle from the horizon, etc., without defining important factors such as the exact position of the witness and the local terrain.

Early in my own investigations, I discovered that the average witness could not even pinpoint true north – even when he or she had lived in the area all their life. It is common for a witness to say that the object appeared in the east, say, and traveled to the southwest when, actually, I found that it had appeared in the west and traveled northeast! Estimates of altitude are much more difficult to make, even for experienced pilots. And at night, it is almost impossible to judge the altitude of an object (usually just a light) of unknown size. Everything becomes relative. For example, a jet airliner traveling at 500 miles per hour at

30,000 feet appears to be moving rather slowly to a witness on the ground, while a Piper Cub rattling along at 60 miles per hour, at treetop level, seems to be moving at a much faster speed. In my files, I have reports by police officers that claimed the object they saw must have been traveling at a speed of at least 2000 miles per hours. One report by an elderly man in Florida claimed he saw an object take off at a speed of 5000 miles per hour!

If you are a battlefield veteran, you know that the experienced eye can actually see a cannon shell in flight and even estimate roughly where it is going to land. Artillery shells lumber along at a fairly slow speed – 700 to 800 miles per hour. Bullets and high velocity shells travel much faster and can't be seen with the naked eye. In order to see a fast-moving object, particularly at night, it must either be gigantic in size or it must be a great distance from the observer. An orbiting satellite, for example, can be traveling several thousand miles per hour but is visible because it is hundreds or thousands of miles from the observer.

Therefore, estimates of UFO speeds are usually inaccurate, and altitude estimates are questionable unless the object appears near something of a known altitude – such as a mountain or a conventional aircraft. The knowledgeable investigator also carefully checks direction with a compass, allowing for normal magnetic variations in the area, from the exact position of the original sighting. (It is surprising how few investigators bother to do this.) Ninety percent of the time you will find that the witnesses were completely wrong in all their estimates, particularly if they were in a moving vehicle at the time of their sighting. We are on safe ground only in the comparatively rare cases in which a local radar station got a reading on the object or when – as has happened in several instances over the years – the witnesses were able to track the object with a theodolite, a surveying instrument that measures angles and directions accurately.

While Air Force investigators were bent on "proving" that the witness had seen the planet Venus or a weather balloon, the average civilian investigator is biased in the opposite direction. He's usually trying to prove that the witness saw some type of alien spaceship. This bias leads to all kinds of misrepresentations in his report. The witness may have just seen a bluish light with a red glow on the upper parts but the investigator gets him to admit that the light was circular or discoid (all lights seen from a distance are circular in appearance), asks many leading questions, and ultimately ends up putting

together his own version of the event. The final report is apt to read: “Witness saw a solid object surrounded by a blue haze, with a red flashing light on top.” When the report is later translated into magazine articles and books, it becomes “a disc-shaped object with blue lights and a red strobe light on the upper surface.” The strange blue light has become a metallic flying saucer from outer space!

Unfortunately, the Air Force debunkers were often correct when they claimed that a large percentage of UFO sightings were of natural phenomena – weather balloons and conventional aircraft. But, oddly, none of the astronomers and physicists associated with Project Blue Book ever bothered to study the sources of these misinterpretations. For example, a phenomenon known as noctilucent clouds has produced many spurious UFO reports – but the only real study of these clouds has been made in the Soviet Union.

Noctilucent clouds are brilliantly glowing masses of self-luminous gas that orbit the Earth at altitudes ranging from 80 to 500 miles. Some are gigantic in size, and a ground observer can easily think they are much lower in the atmosphere. They appear in a variety of shapes from spherical to spiral and saw-toothed forms. Back in the mid-1960s, Soviet scientists discovered that these clouds reflect radio and television waves. The USAF attempted to fire instrument-laden rockets into them from isolated bases in Alaska, but the results of these experiments were never released. We really know very little about how these clouds are formed. Some scientists think they are related to the Air Glow phenomenon.

What is the Air Glow phenomenon? Astronauts orbiting Earth have seen and photographed spherical glows on the dark side of this planet. These spheres are sometimes arranged in neat formations, like rows of soldiers. This phenomenon is rarely seen by ground observers, just as the huge, self-luminous, brownish clouds also reported by astronauts seem to elude witnesses on earth. It is probable that in a few rare, isolated instances, these phenomena have been mistaken for UFOs.

Ball lightning, another rare phenomenon, can also produce spurious UFO reports – especially from ships at sea. Ball lightning consists of spherical charges of electricity that appear during storms and sometimes glide along the surface until they touch something and disappear with a loud explosion. They have been known to come down chimneys, circle a room, and fly out an open

window or door! In a number of cases, animals and humans have been killed by these discharges. Ball lightning at sea appears to be a solid, glowing sphere rushing down from the sky and disappearing into the water.

Although few laymen are aware of it, lightning, including ball lightning, does not always travel from the sky to the ground. It sometimes rises from the ground or sea and races upwards into the storm clouds! This lightning-in-reverse can easily be mistaken for a UFO taking off and disappearing into the sky.

In the late 1940s, government scientists became concerned with another kind of natural phenomenon – glowing green fireballs. They still zip across the skies in the Midwest and southwest, and we still don't know much about them. They are probably related to bolides – small, low-flying meteors. Since they usually appear and disappear very quickly most witnesses tend to disregard them rather than report them.

Throughout the 1960s, German and American scientists launched hundreds of special rockets all over the world, which released great clouds of barium gas into the upper atmosphere. These luminous clouds slowly stretched out, following the patterns of the Earth's magnetic field like iron filings clustering around a horseshoe magnet. Some of these experiments inspired erroneous UFO reports because they could be seen for hundreds of square miles.

For some mysterious reason, the UFO phenomenon has apparently taken advantage of the barium cloud experiments, particularly when the space shots were given advance publicity. In 1966, a barium cloud shot was announced for August 16 and that night, thousands of people turned in UFO reports. The phenomenon was so intense that radio and TV reporters in Arkansas stood in the streets and gave their audiences eyewitness live coverage. A group of scientists in Chicago gleefully collected a large number of reports from Illinois, Minnesota, and Wisconsin, believing the barium cloud shot had caused the UFO flap. The only problem was: the August 16th shot was postponed at the last minute! So the witnesses in five states must have been watching something else. But what? The barium cloud shot was postponed several more times and was finally held on Sept. 24, 1966. Not a single UFO report was registered on that date!

A few serious UFO investigators have made it a point to find and read

technical books about the barium cloud phenomena. Too many others, irritated by the Air Force's often absurd explanations, still continue to overwhelm the UFO reporting networks with reports of these things. Common meteors zooming across several states have also inspired waves of false UFO reports. Occasionally, mischievous youngsters get into the act by releasing hot-air balloons consisting of plastic bags heated by candles. Several states have now outlawed such activities because the balloons can cause fires when they finally drift earthward.

Colorado University's controversial UFO study (i.e., The Condon Committee) admitted that genuine hoaxes seemed to be rare. Nevertheless, whenever a civilian UFO research organization came across a case containing puzzling psychic elements, it has been a longstanding practice to cry "hoax" and brand the innocent, well-meaning witnesses as liars and frauds. They failed, however, to realize that the stranger the ingredients in the witnesses' stories were, the more likely it was that the reported incidents were true. Modern investigators must be very cautious about crying hoax. Legally, a hoax must be proved either by overwhelming evidence or, preferably, by a written confession signed by the perpetrator of the hoax. Otherwise, both the investigator and the organization he represents can be sued for libel. In many instances, local police and reporters have deliberately labeled a case a hoax at the request of the witness to protect him from the hordes of amateur investigators and enthusiasts who inevitably descend upon the scene after the initial report is published.

One of the most difficult problems in ufology is proving the validity of actual UFO photographs. Hundreds are taken each year – so many, in fact, that the photography agencies that supply newspapers and magazines are now very selective in their distribution. They pay the paltry sum of $10 for all rights to UFO photos that are unusually clear and distinctive. Many UFO photographers simply give their pictures away free to UFO organizations or the wire services. The flying saucer photos taken in 1966 by Ralph Ditter, a barber in Zanesville, OH, were widely published on the covers of magazines and in many UFO books and publications without him ever receiving as much as a nickel for his efforts. He had tacked the pictures on the wall of his barbershop, where they remained for months until a local newspaperman happened to see them. Ditter turned the pictures over to the reporter and signed a release relinquishing all rights. The wire services picked them up and literally spread

them throughout the world. Later, an eager but uninformed local UFO investigator branded the photos hoaxes because the numbers on the film were "out of sequence." That is, the pictures were not taken in the sequence that Ditter remembered.

Actually, this out-of-sequence phenomenon is as mysterious as the UFOs themselves. It has occurred in dozens of cases. Even Polaroid films are numbered in sequence. This numbering of films is done by an automatic machine; the possibility of the numbers being stamped out of sequence are almost inconceivable. Nevertheless, it is common for the witness's memory to be different from the photographic record. He might recall that picture number one was of his child on a bicycle, number two was of a UFO hovering over his house, number three was of the UFO flying off above some trees, and so on. But on the film, picture number one turns out to be of the UFO flying off over the trees, number two is of the child on the bicycle, and number three is of the UFO over the house. It is as if some mysterious force has juggled the numbers – or the witness's memory. This is one of the many reasons why it is so important to examine the witness in depth – something few investigators bother to do.

Many civilian UFO enthusiasts conduct conversations rather than investigations. Witnesses must be interrogated carefully by reviewing each incident and movement on the day of their sighting, as well as their movements and actions after the sighting. Some remarkable, often incredible, details crop up during well-conducted, in-depth interviews. In a Long island case in 1967, I learned that the witness had started the day by being followed by a mysterious car. When he parked on Main Street in Babylon, NY, the car pulled in behind him and its occupant jumped out, pointed a camera at him, and took his picture. He thought this was odd, but soon dismissed it. Later that same day, he saw a circular object hovering low above some trees on a lonely stretch of road. He did not think the two incidents were related, of course, but I have investigated many "phantom photographer" cases, and I believe these mysterious cameramen are connected to the phenomenon in some strange way. Other investigators have uncovered similar incidents in England and, most recently, in Sweden.

In other cases, I have found that healthy witnesses have suffered inexplicable blackouts or fainting spells hours before seeing a UFO. These blackouts, experienced by people who had never suffered them before, are especially

prevalent in UFO "contact" cases. It is also important to extract a complete biography of the witness with emphasis on any unusual psychic or occult experiences they have had prior to their UFO encounter. I discovered that the majority of all witnesses had latent or active psychic abilities. After I revealed this in a series of articles in the 1960s, other independent investigators around the world confirmed it in their own research.

Although many UFO believers choose to assume that most UFO sightings are random chance encounters, the startling truth is that witnesses are selected by some mysterious process and that strictly accidental sightings are rare, if not altogether nonexistent.

Perhaps the greatest deficiency in the Air Force questionnaire was its neglect to extract the most basic personal information about the witness. It asked only for the witness's name, occupation, and address. However, even the birthdates of the witnesses can be important. (In a series of contact cases I investigated in 1967, I discovered that all of the witnesses had been born on the same date!) Religion can also play a part. Although we now have a huge body of many thousands of reports covering the past 30 years, we find that Catholic and Jewish witnesses are extremely rare. Protestants and "fallen Catholics" (those who have drifted away from the active practice of their religion) account for the bulk of the reports. People with American Indian or Gypsy blood in their background tend to see more UFOs than other people.

If sightings occurred on a purely accidental basis, certain statistical laws should be followed. There should be more smiths, Browns, and Joneses among the witnesses simply because there are more of them in the population. But this isn't the case. People with unusual names like Jabkowsky tend to have more sightings than the Smiths. Although left-handed people are a decided minority, there are more left-handed contactees than right-handed ones. The late Ivan Sanderson once pointed out that people with red or blond hair also seemed more prone to have UFO experiences.

The selectivity doesn't end there. Occupations also are of special importance. Schoolteachers, especially those dealing with "gifted" or, conversely, "developmentally delayed" children, seem to be involved in an unusually high percentage of low-level cases and incidents in which the object pursued a car. This UFO penchant for schoolteachers seems to be a worldwide factor. In my travels, I found another special group not widely mentioned in published

reports: police officers and night watchmen. While the UFO observations of on-duty policemen are frequently cited by reporters searching for reliable witnesses, a great many lawmen also have unusual sightings while off-duty, as do night watchmen (who are often retired cops). Finally, and most chilling of all, men and women who are civilian employees at military bases (or who work at jobs requiring a security clearance) are targeted. Barbers, farmers, and auto mechanics are decidedly rare among UFO witnesses. In recent years, there has been a sharp increase in sightings among doctors, lawyers, regional politicians, and stubborn, skeptical newspapermen.

Obviously the UFO phenomenon has some system of selectivity, and it is highly probable that most of the people picked undergo something more than a mere visual sighting – something they cannot remember later. Are their minds being reprogrammed, as many of the top researchers now suspect?

The only way we will ever learn what is really going on is by thoroughly investigating the witnesses themselves. The UFOs are so widespread (the objects must number in the thousands during flap periods) and so active at ground level that they must be doing something. Whatever it is, it's obvious they are doing it to people – special people who have been carefully picked from the mainstream of society and chosen for special treatment. Therefore, their descriptions of what they have seen are less important than what they have experienced physically, psychologically, and mentally. The objects are merely the medium for their message, whatever it might be. The Air Force never got anywhere because it was concerned solely with explaining away the descriptions of the objects. The civilian UFO organizations have never made any progress because they have been concerned with trying to interpret the meaning of the objects, determining their source, and attacking the Air Force explanation. Proving the reliability of witness became more important to them than learning the details of what the witnesses actually experienced.

A few years ago, Dr. J. Allen Hynek devised a "Strangeness" index to compare witness reliability with the degree of strangeness in their report. Unfortunately, strangeness is totally subjective, like pain, and difficult – if not altogether impossible – to measure. What might seem incredibly strange to one inexperienced investigator might seem almost routine to a more experienced person. Reliability is also difficult to establish. The usual criterion is the person's occupation. But the history of ufology has shown that a town drunk can have a real UFO experience as well as the town's police chief. The drunk

would automatically receive a very low rating on the reliability scale. The police chief might actually be a conniving, cantankerous, lying old reprobate, but his occupation would give him high rating.

Similarly, a person who has a long history of prophetic dreams and other psychic experiences might be known to the local gossips as a crackpot, and would rate low on the reliability scale. But extensive UFO studies have shown that this is also the kind person most likely to have a genuine low-level or landing sighting. Their psychic ability might also make them susceptible to receiving a telepathic message or undergoing something even stranger. So they would have a high strangeness quotient and a low reliability rating, thus negating their report and unfairly depriving the public of valuable information.

Witnesses should be judged only by experts trained in such matters: psychiatrists, psychologists, sociologists, and experienced journalists. An experienced lawyer can be a much better UFO investigator than an astrophysicist, for example (whose training does not include dealing with – and judging – people). If nothing else, the past 30 years have taught us that technology is virtually useless in UFO investigation. Nevertheless many civilian investigators still load themselves down with Geiger counters and other expensive gadgets. It is true that excessive radiation has been found at a few UFO sites in the past 30 years, but so few that the odds for stumbling into such a situation are astronomical. Even then, Geiger counters can only indicate the presence of radiation. They cannot give an accurate and scientific measurement of the radiation.

Today, experienced investigators carry tape recorders for interviewing witnesses, and a few plastic bags for collecting samples of any substances that might be found at the UFO site. A compass, a star chart for locating the exact position of the brightest stars in the sky at the time of the sighting, and a pocket camera are the only other pieces of equipment you will really need. Elaborately outfitted expeditions lugging walkie-talkies, theodolites, flares, and firearms are a thing of the past.

Finally, what should you do with your UFO report once you have carefully interviewed the witnesses and painstakingly typed it all up? Make several copies and distribute them to more than one organization or investigative body. The national UFO organizations have a distressing habit of throwing the reports they receive into a file drawer and forgetting about them. Some

organizations even demand exclusive rights to all reports they receive. You might as well flush your report down the toilet.

If the witnesses don't want their names used, give their full names, addresses, etc., in your report but include a notation stating that they wish to remain anonymous. If they agree to having their names used, get the agreement in writing. If you take photographs, buy a pad of "model release" forms from a camera store and make sure everyone who appears in your pictures has signed a release form; if your pictures are ultimately published in a magazine or newspaper you could get in a lot of legal trouble if you don't have written permission from the people you've photographed.

Back in the good old days, UFO investigating was a relatively easy task. Nowadays, ufology is slowly evolving into an exact science and is becoming more and more complicated. The simplistic extraterrestrial hypothesis is losing ground to the complex paraphysical concept. Investigators are no longer concerned with merely proving the Air Force is lying, or that UFOs came from outer space. We are trying to find out what is really going on, and what the ultimate meaning of the phenomenon is. So we have to approach everything with the same thoroughness that military intelligence might use in collecting evidence to find a spy in the Pentagon.

CHAPTER 3

KEEL'S SPEECH TO THE CONGRESS OF SCIENTIFIC UFOLOGISTS – NEW YORK CITY, 1967

I'm sorry but this award, and the plaque you have given me, really threw me off the track... This is a complete surprise to me…

Nonetheless, I have a very sensational speech… I am going to tell you where the flying saucers come from, and I am going to tell you all of the secrets of the saucers. [laughter]

I have been chasing these things for over a year. I have traveled in some twenty states and talked to thousands of people who have seen these things; and I have seen quite a few of them myself. One of them came down very close to the car I was in and scared the living daylights out of me on the night of April 3rd, down in West Virginia. I spent a lot of time down there, as some of you know, chasing the Mothman, but never caught him. We may do a TV series on the Mothman.

I started out a year ago to apply the so-called "scientific method" to saucer sightings. I started checking reports from all over the country. I ended up with 10,000 reports for the year 1966. I have tried, and I am still trying to, sort these into categories: the times that the objects were seen, the kinds of objects seen, the type of witness, and so on, in the hope that this information will give us some clue as to what they are. But, as I plunged deeper into this mystery, I discovered that the flying saucers are not the mystery. The mystery is something else. The mystery is more in the nature of what we call "contactees" and UFO "landings." I think these objects are doing some things here, stealthily, at low-level all over the country – all over the world – and that they are doing them constantly.

I would like to read to you a typical contactee story from The Daily Texarkanian, of Texarkana, Arkansas. The date is April 25. It says that on Friday night, one Judge Lawrence Byrne, who is a distinguished man known for his honesty throughout the community, claims that he was driving along a bayou outside of Texarkana. He saw what he described as a "large aluminum

disc" on the ground. He went over to this thing, and there were three people there. And he talked with them, or tried to talk with them. They couldn't understand him, and he could not understand them. They were speaking in some kind of strange, foreign language. They were slight in stature, and they had Oriental eyes, dark skin, and high cheekbones. He thought they were Japanese. Even though he could not talk with them, they took him aboard this machine and allowed him to examine it. They gave him a guided tour through the machine and, when they let him out, the thing took off and flew away.

Now, there is nothing too remarkable about this story, because we have been hearing them all the time for the last twenty years; but this story is dated April 25, 1897. It is one of the hundreds of contact stories from 1897. And they all fall into the same category. It has only been in the last year that researchers around the country, and around the world, have begun to go back to old newspapers to try to find out what these dirigible-shaped objects were. There were no dirigibles then. A few years later, Count Von Zeppelin came along with his zeppelin. The experiments with lighter-than-air craft up to that time had been very unfortunate. They crashed, or they went about 20 miles and blew up.

So you all have heard of these famous sightings, and we have all kinds of contact stories. Many of them compare favorably with each other, even though they were not widely circulated at the time. The majority of contact stories describe the pilots as being normal-looking people. The Judge said he thought he ran into some Japanese people, but the majority of them have described normal-looking people who could speak English very well (at least in the United States reports). There is a mysterious "woman" described in several of these. In fact, in a series of accounts ranging through Texas, Arkansas, and into California, we have three passengers described. One was an elderly man with a beard, another was a younger man, and the third was a woman. These three people – or three people like them – were apparently seen all over the country during that flap.

Now, you know where this leads us. It sort of indicates that maybe Adamski was telling the truth after all. Maybe a lot of these other people are telling the truth, and yet their stories are contradictory.

All of these witnesses in 1897 were told something different. Naturally, the whole world was in an uproar over this mysterious dirigible. Actually, there

were a lot of them, because on the same day, you find a dirigible was seen over Chicago, one was seen over Texas, and one over London. There were too many of them. There must have been several of these machines flying around. You find that when witnesses approached the pilots on the ground and asked them where they were from, they all got a different answer. In only one case did the pilot mention outer space, and in that case they said that they had just built this thing, and that they were going to try to fly to Mars in it. In all of the other cases, they claimed they were local inventors from Indiana and/or Nebraska.

In every case, they gave a different story and said that the full details of the invention would be released to the world "any day now." In a couple of cases, they mentioned the world situation at the time (in 1897). They said that "as soon as Cuba is free," they would release their invention to the world.

The point is that they were deliberately lying to the witnesses. Obviously, all the witnesses, or some of them (the judge, the police officers, and so on) may not have been making up the stories. They may have made up some details, as often happens, but I think that these people were being lied to. And I think that these people today – the contactees – are being lied to.

There is an enormous "contactee" situation going on right now, this week, throughout the country. These are what we call "silent contactees." you never hear about them. They never make any noise. In fact, their next-door neighbors don't know their stories. As I travel, I dig out these people. Sometimes it is a lot of hard work. Sometimes it requires two weeks of work to locate or track down one rumor and to talk with people. They all tell me basically the same things, except for the content of the messages they have received.

Woodrow Derenberger in West Virginia says that he was told these "spacemen" come from Lanulos. And you are familiar with other stories where the names of "planets" like "clarion" and "Maser," and so on, have been mentioned.

The truth is that the "flying saucers" don't want us to know where they come from. They are quite willing to contact us, and they do contact us frequently. They contact individuals on highways. They contact people on farms, in isolated spots. And there is a lot of it going on. I can't prove any of this in a short talk, but you have to believe that I have the documentation. I have talked

to many people.

I have fascinating tape recordings, some made in New Jersey, and some made in West Virginia. If you play them side by side, the people are telling the same story, although they have never heard of each other. Their stories have never been published. These are not the kind of stories that people like George Adamski have been telling; these are details about the craft, and about the type of beings that have approached them. There are other details as well…

When I find a new contactee, I have a questionnaire of eight questions. If they answer these questions "right," I tend to believe their story. I find also that the majority of these new contactees are women. There are very few men. I think this probably has been the case throughout. Perhaps we usually think of women as being talkative, but I think women are also less skeptical and easier to approach.

We also have a number of cases where people have become frightened and have gone to the police complaining that these things were landing in their backyards, and that these "spacemen" were trying to talk to them. While the police keep a record of this, they make fun of these people who report. When I walk into a police station (that is always my first stop), they say, "Oh, we've got a nut down the road who claims these things are landing in their backyard." So I go and talk with that "nut," who is usually a woman, and she usually has the same story that I heard a hundred times. I could practically recite it, but I won't. As I say, these are details that I am keeping to myself (although now I am beginning to spread them among a few investigators; we are using these details to check out and possibly confirm these stories).

An object landed in a rather desolate place on long Island on April 14, 1967. The witness was driving an automobile, and the car stalled. He saw a door open on the object, and some kind of mechanical device got out of the object. It was not a person, but the witness was able to see inside the object. He said he saw dials and so on. There were a few details in his story that confirmed details we have heard elsewhere. He said this mechanical device got out and shoveled up some dirt, just like the "rover" we sent to the moon.

Two weeks earlier, on March 31st, something supposedly landed on a farm in Wellington, Texas. The witness (Carroll Wayne Watts) said he did not see anybody, but that a door opened, and he heard a voice that invited him aboard.

He walked aboard the thing, and a voice told him they would take him for a ride if he would submit to a physical examination. He refused to submit to the physical examination. He got off the thing, and it took off. There was one detail to his story that has gone unpublished. When I learned that one detail, I tended to believe his story was true.

I think we now have many thousands of these stories going unnoticed, because nobody is investigating them. The air Force investigation, as it has been said here many times, is a joke. If you report a sighting to the Air Force, they will mail you a form that is idiotic. They will mail this form, and expect you to fill it out and mail it back to them, and they will put it in their file. If you fail to come up with one little detail, like what the temperature was when you saw the object, they classify it as "insufficient," and they put it in their insufficient file. They don't record it in their statistics.

In some cases – and I have talked with people who have gone through it – they have reported a low-level sighting, or have said that their automobile was being pursued by these objects. In those cases, the Air Force may make several phone calls. These calls usually come long-distance from Wright-Patterson, and they will sometimes be as long as three hours. Somebody at Wright-Patterson grills these people very carefully about every detail. And it is obvious to the witnesses that a form is being filled out on the other end – a much more elaborate form than the one that is mailed out.

I have gone to the Air Force and said, "I am not interested in this form that is mailed out; I would like to see the other one – the one you use on the phone calls." They say, "Oh, we haven't got anything like that." so, then I produce tapes of these people who told me the story and the questions they were asked. Many of the questions asked in these phone conversations seem quite irrelevant to the flying saucer problem. Obviously, the Air Force and the government are aware of what is going on, but they are not paying attention to the individual sightings. Nobody could afford to. They are, however, paying a great deal of attention to the areas where the sightings are constant.

Sightings are constant in West Virginia. They are constant in Indiana, Kansas, and Nebraska. We sometimes have 150 sightings in one day around the country. The scope of this thing is unimaginable, and it goes unreported by the major media. The local newspapers often carry headlines about saucer sightings, and feature editorials asking, "Why doesn't somebody tell us something? (When I

write newspaper articles, they often carry them on the editorial page. Many newspapers have dropped the word "UFO" altogether. They now call them "spaceships." They will say, "Another spaceship was seen last night by 89 people.")

In areas with sporadic UFO activity, the Air Force pretends to be out of touch with the situation. However, when we have an area where sightings are constant, we also have constant Air Force activity in the air. This comes in the form of flying boxcars – a very large cargo plane that looks rather weird. These Air Force boxcars fly at treetop level, and are loaded with instrumentation. In certain areas, whether it be West Virginia, Indiana, or Long Island, these planes fly back and forth, all night long, over areas where UFOs have landed. They are keeping an eye out, and they obviously have instrumentation. They seem to be trying to do something about the UFOs – trying to make some determination. But they don't want publicity. I have not written any articles on this aspect as of yet, but I have got a whopper coming up soon.

Right now, everybody is accusing the CIA of investigating UFOs. I wish the CIA would begin by investigating itself. [applause] As you know, they have a very big building outside of Washington, D.C. it has a sign pointing to the "Bureau of public roads." Everybody knows this means it is the CIA building. If you really want to go out to the CIA building, there is a limousine that leaves every day from in front of the Soviet Embassy, which will take you there.

The CIA has denied to me, personally, that they have had any interest in the UFO subject since 1953 (i.e., since the Robertson report). But some other agency (the NSA) is very interested, and they are investigating these things in great detail. It is not the Air Force, and it is not the CIA.

This brings us to the Men in Black (MIB), whoever they are. They were out in the state of Washington a month ago. They went through eight communities. It was like a blitzkrieg. There was a tremendous UFO flap out there, including the disappearances of many dogs, which goes hand-in-hand with all of this. You may have heard about it. We always have "dognappings" for some reason. God knows what UFOs are doing with dogs!

Whenever there is a really big flap, these mystery men often turn up. They went through several Washington communities and told the witnesses to keep quiet

about what they had seen. When the local newspapers tried to do some UFO stories and went around to the witnesses, the witnesses said, "We were told not to talk." I talked to the reporter who carried out the investigation. I got the names of some of the witnesses, and called them up. I tried to get something out of them. They would not deny that they had seen these things (and it would have been easy for them to do that). They are honest people. They just said they could not say anything about it. They had been warned to keep quiet.

The same thing has been happening out on Long Island and in many other sectors. Within 30 miles of New York, there have been several Men in Black cases in the last two weeks. I have come within a couple of hours of catching one of them impersonating an Air Force officer. I have reported this to the Air Force. I have given them the numbers that were on the phony identification cards these MIB carried. I practically demanded that the Air Force push this thing through.

I have also been to the FBI with this. I am still running around out there, trying to catch these MIB. I have high hopes that one of these days I will. Maybe then, we will find out a little bit more about why they want to suppress the fact that something is happening not only in our skies, but also on the ground – where these things are landing. They must have a reason for it.

The MIB were doing the same thing in 1897. In one case, an object fell out of one of the airships when it flew over a field. The object was simply a piece of pottery with some very strange writing on it. This object was displayed in a local store in Texas. A day or so later, a man no one had seen in town before came through and bought the object. He paid a great deal of money for it, and he looked like an Oriental. His skin was dark. He had high cheekbones. He had narrow, slanting eyes. The full report was in the newspapers in 1897.

Today, the drivers of some of these MIB cars (mostly black Cadillacs) have been described the same way. So, possibly we have been accusing the Air Force, the CIA, and the NSA unjustly. Maybe somebody else is interested in keeping these things quiet. I hope that we will very soon have some answers.

MIB: 1967-68 – SAUCER NEWS, SPRING/SUMMER 1969

Speaking before a closed session of the Congress of Scientific Ufologists in

New York in June, 1967, I warned that the Men in Black incidents were on the increase, and that we could probably expect to hear even more from these mystery men in the coming months.

Later, in the pages of Saucer News, I predicted that more and more UFO researchers would be having direct personal experience with the UFO phenomenon. I stressed that further "silencings" were likely to occur. Take a look at the record…

In the past year, an almost staggering number of longtime ufologists have suddenly quit the scene. Some have stopped answering mail altogether, and at least two refuse to speak to any of their old ufological friends on the telephone. Six important UFO personalities have died. Whole regional UFO-investigating organizations have collapsed, and their leaders have publicly disavowed their interest in the phenomenon. Others are now living in bewildered fear, concerned over disappearing mail and perplexed by the antics of their telephones.

The main topic at the 1968 Congress of Scientific Ufologists, held in Cleveland, OH, was the Men in Black. Some researchers were claiming that they had been followed by black Cadillacs, and had even been shot at. Unknown intruders broke into motel rooms, automobiles, and private homes during this hectic year, to steal only UFO research papers, documentation, and photographs. There were literally scores of these incidents. Some of the people trapped in these bizarre situations were newspapermen, writers, and independent researchers not known to the ufological mainstream.

A UFO-chasing newsman in Philadelphia was reportedly shot at while in a laundromat. Another reporter in West Virginia was repeatedly harassed. Accounts of identical harassments came in from Canada to Mexico City, and even from Sweden and Germany. No place seemed safe. Even TV producers, writers, and personalities concerned with UFOs have admitted to me, in confidence, that they, too, have been undergoing all kinds of strange experiences. One changed his unlisted home number three times and, still, the harassment continued. Another had his phone taken out altogether.

Those who have been on the outside of this have read the various reports with sarcasm and disbelief. But it has all been horrifyingly real to the hard-working researchers who have been probing into strange and revealing cases in their

own areas. The old speculations blaming "the government" for these abusive and senseless tactics may be invalid.

It is abundantly clear that a mysterious third party is involved – a party who seems to be directly related to the UFO phenomenon itself…

If you want to try to understand what is really going on, you must shelve your personal beliefs, and try to base your conclusions upon the obvious implications in all of the events now taking place all over the world. The subject is most complicated. A simple and brief explanation is not possible. You must prepare yourself to understand the complex "big picture."

A knowledge of history is more important than a knowledge of astronomy. Mankind lies at the core of the mystery. Man's past and future are directly involved, and will be affected – seriously affected. So, try to broaden your general knowledge. Base your speculations on the available facts, not upon wishful thinking.

When you are on the right track, you will know it. Your phone will start ringing, but there won't be anybody on the other end. Or, there may come a soft rap on your door in the middle of the night.

And then you'll howl with indignation: "Why didn't somebody tell us that this is what it was all about?"

Somebody has been telling you – over and over again – but you haven't been listening.

CHAPTER 4

THE UFO SILENCERS – SAGA MAGAZINE, MAY 1975

Planes were a rare sight in 1924. A few hardy airmail pilots were just beginning to blaze trails in rickety old biplanes, and a handful of barnstormers were turning up at county fairs in decrepit Jennies left over from World War I. But most Americans had never even seen an airplane, and when a sputtering engine sounded in the skies over cities and suburbs, people ran into the streets to gape with wonder. In May of that year, there was great excitement on the isolated farms near Gem, WV, in Braxton County, when a huge aircraft suddenly appeared, bobbing and weaving closer and closer to the ground, until it dipped down into a thick forest and apparently crashed. According to the farmer who watched it go down, it was "as big as a battleship" and didn't seem to have any wings. In those days, every plane crash was big news commanding headlines around the world, so a local newsman, the late John Cole, eagerly joined the party that went searching for the wreckage. They systematically scoured the woods and, within hours, they found the wreck in a small clearing. "We weren't the first ones there, though," Cole recalled more than 40 years later:

> There were already five or six men in the clearing. Some of them were dressed in black business suits, neckties and all, and that seemed damned silly in that part of the woods. Others were dressed in coveralls of a funny color – some kind of shiny material. They were talking among themselves in a rapid-fire foreign language when we found them. They got real excited when they saw us. The men in coveralls ran into the wreck, like they were trying to hide. Some of our men were carrying guns, and one of them said, "By God, they're spies!" He started to raise his rifle. I told him to put it down.
>
> The strangers were all small, just a little over five feet tall, and they all looked like Orientals. You know, with high cheekbones, "slant" eyes, and dark skin. One of them spoke English with a peculiar accent. He told us nobody was hurt, and that everything

was “all right.” He said he would call on the sheriff later and make a complete report. But he never did. There wasn’t much we could do. No crime had been committed. Nobody was hurt.

John Cole was in his eighties at the time of the interview, but his mind was sharp and his memory was clear. He had not read anything about flying saucers, he claimed, and was unfamiliar with the Men in Black lore. He continued:

> Here’s the funny part. While I was looking around, I spotted a little metal thingamajig on the ground. I picked it up and decided to keep it. I put it in my pocket. We all finally went away, leaving the foreigners to fuss with their contraption. It didn’t look like much of a flying machine. In fact, it was a wonder it could fly at all. It was like the fuselage of a modern plane, with windows and all. But it didn’t have any wings, tail, or propellers. And, like the farmer said, it was mighty big. I’d say it was at least 75 feet long. It filled the whole clearing.
>
> I went back home. I was living in Weston in those days. I went right to bed. I was pretty tired from all the day’s hiking. About 3:00 a.m., somebody started pounding on my door. I got up and looked, and there was an Army officer standing there. He was dressed in one of those broad-brimmed hats they used to wear, with the leg wrappings and all. It was a U.S. Army uniform all right. I was in the Big War. But we didn’t see many soldiers in West Virginia in those days. Anyway, except for his clothes, he looked just like those foreigners from the airplane: slant eyes, dark skin, but maybe a little taller.
>
> He said, “You picked up something yesterday. We need it back.” I was half asleep so, at first, I couldn’t think what he meant. Then I remembered that metal thingamajig. It was still in my coat pocket, so I went and got it. I asked him, “Is this what you mean?” He didn’t answer. He just took it and walked off, without a word. He didn’t seem to have a horse or a car. I shuffled back to bed. But the next day, I started wondering about it. How had he managed to track me down? A couple of days later, I went back to those woods and found that clearing. It was

> empty. The grass and bushes were all crushed down where the airplane had been, but there was no other sign of anything or anybody. The farmer said he had seen some lights in the sky the next night, and thought the thing had taken off then. You know, I never wrote the story up for my newspaper. After that Army officer came by, I figured that maybe it was a secret Army deal of some kind. I thought I had better leave well enough alone.

Braxton County produced a series of UFO and monster sightings in the 1950s and 60s, and I ran into Mr. Cole while I was investigating some of those more recent events.

Several years later, I received a letter from a man in the Northwest recounting an almost identical incident, which supposedly happened in Oregon in the 1930s. A strange plane had crashed. Local farmers collected pieces of it and, shortly afterwards, Army officers visited them and rounded up the "souvenirs." Variations of this charade have occurred in England in 1909 and, more recently, in Spain. Modern UFO investigators have vainly tried to link these mystery men with the CIA and the military, accusing them of being part of some massive conspiracy to hide "the truth" about flying saucers from the public. But hundreds of similar episodes have now been reported and closely examined by highly qualified civilian researchers. It is evident that these Men in Black (so named because they are usually dressed in black suits) do not represent any known government, but are actually related to the UFO phenomenon itself. Their basic purpose is to spread confusion and prevent official investigators from learning the truth about UFOs.

They have done their job well. Despite 27 years of controversy and investigation, no real evidence of any kind has fallen into the hands of the authorities. Aside from scorched circles of grass and holes in the ground, no physical debris from a flying saucer has reached official investigators. Even worse, the clever manipulations of the MIB have succeeded in convincing both official and amateur investigators that many true UFO reports were nothing more than pointless "hoaxes." In several instances, witnesses and investigators have even been discredited altogether by such manipulations.

Since most UFO enthusiasts believe that flying saucers are space vehicles from another planet, they cannot fit the apparently very human MIB into their theories. Multi-armed, bug-eyed monsters are more acceptable as UFO pilots

than olive-skinned, Oriental-looking gentlemen. There have been monster reports in a growing number of landing and contact cases, but reports of the human-type greatly outnumber them. This is why some leading UFO researchers speculated for years that flying saucers might be coming from behind the "Bamboo Curtain" in Asia. But in 1967, the Soviet news agency, Tass, openly accused the CIA of controlling the phenomenon and causing the widespread sightings in Tashkent, which is in southwestern Russia. Those sightings somehow inspired a revival of religious beliefs, and Soviet officials viewed such actions as part of some fiendish capitalist conspiracy.

Today, the term "Men in Black" is generic and is applied to any mysterious stranger who appears at the site of a paranormal event. However they do not always dress in black or look Oriental. Instead of having the classic olive complexion, some appear to be deeply tanned, even during the middle of winter. They often walk unsteadily, like they are drunk, and display other symptoms of "the bends" (a reaction to too much nitrogen in the blood). They speak slowly, parrotlike, as if they are reciting memorized speeches. Their dark eyes are usually described as being "hypnotic." Many witnesses have also commented on their hair, which is usually an unnatural color – as if it were dyed. Some have very short hair, like a crewcut just growing back in, with a neatly shaved circle toward the back of the head. They don't have much of a sense of humor but, when they do laugh, a kind of cackle escapes their lips. Some seem to have difficulty breathing, gasping between words. In a few cases, the MIB seemed perfectly normal in every respect, until they made a small blunder of some kind. When offered a dish of Jell-O, one of these more "normal" types tried to drink it. Offered a cigar, another tried to chew it up and eat it rather than light it.

The majority of the MIB are well-dressed in expensively cut suits, usually black or gray, and made of a glossy, slightly reflective material. In a number of reports, they are seen wearing shoes with unusually thick rubber soles. One odd consistency in these reports is that their clothing usually seems to be brand new. The soles of their shoes look unwalked upon. They look as if they have just left their haberdashers. Yet in a number of instances, their brand-new clothes were strangely out of date. They were wearing styles that had been out fashion for several years or, even more odd, they were dressed in styles that came into fashion several years later! The same peculiar feature is apparent in their vehicles. They have been seen in automobiles that were 20 years old, or

older, yet were as perfect as a showroom model. Witnesses who have entered the MIB vehicles reported that they smelled new.

Black Cadillacs with heavily tinted windows seem to be their preferred mode of transportation but, in recent years, they have also appeared in Volkswagens and Fords. One witness in the Midwest claimed he was visited by a tall, extremely thin, cadaverlike man who traveled in a car that seemed to be assembled from the parts of many makes and models. Phantom campers, station wagons, and panel trucks have also been reported with increasing frequency. Witnesses in several cases have managed to get the license numbers of the mysterious vehicles, but police checks revealed that no such numbers had been issued!

This is not a phenomenon restricted to the U.S. The MIB have been reported in many parts of the world, including Italy, Germany, Spain, Great Britain, and Sweden. In 1973, a young Swedish journalist working on a UFO story was sitting in a restaurant outside of Stockholm, when a stranger walked over to his table and sat down uninvited. "You should give up your interest in flying saucers," he stated flatly in perfect Swedish. Before the startled reporter could ask any questions, the man rose and quickly left the restaurant. The only unusual thing about him was his clothes, the reporter recalled. They didn't seem to fit properly.

There have been countless episodes of this type in the U.S. In 1968, Peter Stevens, a young building contractor near Albany, NY, was sitting in a snack bar when "a tall, tan, saturnine-looking man" sat down on the stool beside him. "There have been people watching the sky every night down by the river in Scotia," the man said suddenly. "People who look for UFOs should be very, very careful." Like the Swedish mystery man, this one then made a quick exit. At my request, Stevens later made some drawings of the man. He sent the best one to me. A few weeks later, he and his wife returned home to find their house had been ransacked. Nothing was missing except the MIB drawings! A few months later, Peter Stevens suddenly died.

Flying saucer contactees seem to have more trouble with these mysterious men than any other single group. It is not unusual for a witness to receive unwelcome nocturnal visitors of this type soon after his encounter with a grounded UFO. The standard procedure is to openly threaten the witness, advising him to keep his UFO experience to himself. If the witness has

managed to collect any kind of physical evidence, the MIB will demand it in forceful terms. There are almost endless variations to the games they play, however.

Stan Gordon, one of Pennsylvania's most active UFO investigators, has come across several bizarre MIB cases involving not UFOs, but tall, hairy monsters. (There has been an epidemic of Bigfoot-type "creature" sightings throughout the U.S. in 1973-74.) In one creature case, the monster appeared outside a house trailer and left some sharply defined footprints. The witnesses reported directly to Gordon. The footprints were not mentioned in the local news media, but while they were photographing the impressions with a Polaroid camera, a station wagon with Ohio license plates pulled up. A man who seemed slightly tipsy climbed out, looked at the footprints, and then grabbed the Polaroid snapshots away from the witness. "You have just taken a picture for us," he announced. Then he kicked at the footprints, smoothing the dirt over them and destroying the evidence. The witnesses became angry and told him they were going to call the police. He leaped into his vehicle and raced away. As in so many cases, his license numbers were unregistered. (Think about this for a moment. There are nearly 100 million vehicle registrations in the U.S. If you tried to invent a false license number, chances are you would come up with a number that is actually in use.)

Sometimes the MIB's tactics are subtler. They are cunning imposters. For years, amateur UFO investigators heard stories about Air Force officers who threatened witnesses into silence. They never bothered to collect descriptions of these officers, but simply assumed that the Air Force was engaged in some kind of conspiracy of silence. Following a wave of such "silencings" in 1967, I discovered that the witnesses had been visited by bogus officers, usually short men with Oriental features, who adopted the names of actual military personnel from nearby bases. For instance, if a Sergeant Snodgrass was stationed nearby, a "Colonel Snodgrass" would drop in on local witnesses. In February 1967, Air Force headquarters in the Pentagon recognized the problem by issuing a letter to all commands urging security officers to be alert for these phantom airmen. Since impersonating a military officer is a violation of federal law, the FBI was also alerted, and their agents became involved in several UFO episodes. But the MIB remained elusive…

Scores of other investigators, including well-known personalities such as Ivan T. Sanderson, Otto Binder, Brad Steiger, Dr. James McDonald, and Dr. J.

Allen Hynek have become involved in MIB cases. All had unwelcome experiences with mysterious telephone monitors. Sanderson's phone on his farm in the mountains of New Jersey was plagued with harassing noises and interference, and his mail was apparently being closely watched. Peter Stevens and his wife changed their phone number several times, but the harassment persisted, even after they switched to an unlisted number. Stan Gordon recently revealed that "a great amount of mail containing reports from our investigators, and signed affidavits from witnesses, never arrived at our office. One investigator who had detailed information on a very strange case, mailed the report to us three different times, and we still never received any of them."

Disturbingly, investigators who suspected their mail was being screened have suddenly received batches of mail from communist and neo-Nazi organizations. If any government agency were actually watching their mail, it would look as if they were engaged in subversive activities.

These manipulations have contributed to the atmosphere of paranoia that has dominated the UFO field for years. The common conclusion is that only the government – the CIA or the military – has the machinery needed to tap large numbers of phones and intercept the mails. But I learned that these same problems often plagued the official investigators. Official reports and photographs sent by mail, instead of courier, have even been switched en route with doctored documents! The MIB seem to have an intelligence organization that makes our CIA seem like a bunch of cub scouts. They have often zeroed in on UFO witnesses who have not disclosed their sightings to anyone. It is not unusual for a family to return to their home after watching UFOs cavort above their front yard and have the phone ring immediately, sometimes with nothing but silence on the other end, sometimes with a mysterious voice warning them to keep their mouths shut.

In 1969, a blonde woman visited witnesses in West Virginia and Ohio, winning instant admission to their homes by claiming to be "John Keel's secretary." Somehow, this woman was able to locate people I had interviewed, but had never written about. She carried a clipboard and asked a series of involved, very sophisticated questions – not the kind of questions usually asked by UFO enthusiasts, or even by the Air Force. Over the years, other pseudo-investigators have turned up claiming to represent nonexistent universities or amateur organizations like NICAP and APRO, while they deliberately acted in strange, suspicious ways, adding to the dissension that has always kept the

UFO field in confusion.

Deception and paranoia are the MIB's stock in trade. It becomes impossible to sort the genuine government agents from the frauds. The late Frank Edwards reported the story of a minor official at a large industrial plant, who saw a huge glowing object at 4:30 a.m. one morning in Dec. 1965. The man stopped on his way home and reported the sighting to the state police. A few hours later, two "military officers" appeared at his plant and questioned him for two hours. At the conclusion of the interview, one of the officers said, "We can't tell you what to do, but we can offer a suggestion: Don't talk about this matter to anyone." How had the two officers heard of the sighting and moved so fast? And why would they go through so much trouble over a fairly routine sighting?

Dr. J. Allen Hynek, an astronomer who has been active in UFO research for many years, tells of two men "engaged in work requiring a military clearance" who saw a UFO land in North Dakota on a rainy night in Nov. 1961. Thinking it was a plane in trouble, they stopped their car and ran toward the object. "Their surprise was understandably great when they discovered humanoids around the craft, one of which boldly waved them off in a threatening manner," Hynek says. The men did not report their sighting, but the next day one of them was called out from work and introduced to two strangers. "They asked to be taken to his home," Hynek reported, "where they examined the clothing he had worn the night before, especially his boots, and left without further word." How had the pair located the witness? And why the interest in his shoes?

When the two men who were allegedly taken aboard a UFO near Mississippi's Pascagoula River in 1973 were examined at a nearby Air Force base, the military doctors carefully examined their shoes and scraped samples from their soles… Betty and Barney Hill, another pair of famous contactees, threw the shoes they had been wearing at the time of their abduction into the back of a closet. Later, they found the shoes were covered with a powdery fungus…

Some MIB incidents have been the work of mischievous UFO fans – mere hoaxes. For example, shortly before the mammoth flying saucer convention held in NYC in June 1967, many of the well-known UFO enthusiasts in the NY area received phone calls from a lady identifying herself as "Princess Moon Owl." She claimed she had just arrived from the asteroid Ceres. The lady managed to create quite an uproar in UFO circles.

All the speakers at the 1967 convention were taped by a young man who planned to make copies of the speeches for later sale. He lived in an exclusive apartment house in midtown Manhattan, in an apartment cluttered with expensive electronic gear and shortwave radios. Soon after the convention ended, he returned to his apartment one day and found someone had broken in. The convention tapes were scattered around the room, but none of his valuable equipment had been stolen. Whoever had broken in was obviously interested in the tapes only, and the tape of Ivan Sanderson's speech in particular. Sanderson had studied the UFO phenomenon for years and was convinced that it was a terrestrial-based mystery, not the work of an "advanced technology" from some distant planet. Later, he published a book on that theme, risking the wrath of all those who believed in extraterrestrial intelligences.

In my own investigations into the hundreds of MIB cases and their Watergate-style break-ins, I uneasily recognized a common factor in all of them. Our Men in Black are mainly interested in retrieving evidence that might point to terrestrial UFO origins. The earliest MIB incidents back in 1947 revolved around cases in which the witnesses had either recovered earthly substances at UFO sites, or had seen earthmen or normal terrestrial vehicles in conjunction with their sightings. The MIB were concerned with recovering such evidence and discrediting these eyewitnesses. (Although these cases are usually slighted by UFO investigators who believe in extraterrestrial visitants, there are many episodes – reliably witnessed – in which UFOs have descended and discharged passengers, who then entered ordinary automobiles and drove off. In some cases, the automobiles themselves were dropped by the UFOs.)

One of the first UFO investigators to be harassed by the MIB had figured out – correctly – that UFOs seemed to originate from some point near the North and South poles. Other investigators who have discarded the extra-terrestrial hypothesis and studied the earthly links with the phenomenon have experienced more harassment, mail, and phone problems, etc., than their colleagues who believe in outer space vehicles. If you collect a piece of unidentifiable metal from a UFO witness, you will have no problems. But if a witness hands you a piece of aluminum, magnesium, or silicon – all common earthly substances – you are very apt to receive a visit from the Men in Black. Some witnesses who fall victim to these charades do not consciously understand the importance of what they have seen. Nor do the investigators who believe in the ET hypothesis realize the importance of these cases. In fact, it is common practice

for the amateur UFO organizations to denounce such cases as hoaxes and brand the witnesses liars (or worse) when they find their "evidence" is plain old aluminum. They can be excused for this, though, since the U.S. Air Force has also labeled many cases "hoaxes" for the same reasons.

If any real suppression exists, it is to conceal evidence of terrestrial origin. Whoever is waging this campaign has agents around the world, and technical facilities surpassing those of any known government. By mid-1967, my own conclusions had changed dramatically. I began to freely discuss and write about the terrestrial origin of UFOs. During a trip to Washington, D.C., I was invited to record an hour-long tape for "Voice of America." At that time, the late Al Johnson was doing a series of UFO programs that were broadcast throughout the world on VOA. Johnson interviewed me for an hour and I discussed at length the theory of terrestrial origin. A few days later, he phoned me full of apologies. Our tape had inadvertently been placed in "the wrong pile" and had been completely erased before it could be broadcast. It was just one of those things. Or was it?

That same year, a team from a German TV station was touring America interviewing UFO witnesses and investigators. They were seasoned, professional technicians. They came to my New York apartment, set up all their expensive equipment, and filmed me for 30 minutes. A few days later, I received a call from their Washington office. Their film of me was unusable. Parts were overexposed, and the magnetic soundtrack was spoiled by inexplicable static. It was just another one of those things… Variations of these "coincidences" continually happen. Radio and TV transmitters suddenly go dead during UFO discussions. Vital tapes are mysteriously erased. Precious photographs are lost in the mails. Investigators' phones suddenly go dead at the height of a UFO wave. (The line of my phone was physically cut by a pair of wirecutters twice in 1967.)

In 1974, France Inter, the Paris radio station, aired a series of 39 programs about UFOs, beginning with a pro-UFO talk by Robert Galley, France's Minister of Defense. French broadcasters had spent much of 1973 locating and recording statements by leading authorities in France, England, and the U.S. The list was an impressive one and included such luminaries as Dr. David Saunders, the psychologist at Colorado University who has been entering thousands of UFO sightings into computers; Dr. Jacques Vallee, author of three UFO books; Pierre Kohler, a famous astronomer; and even Cardinal Danielou,

a prominent churchman. The broadcasts were divided into two parts. The first part consisted of statements by witnesses and local French enthusiasts and officials. Hynek, Vallee, and some of the other "advanced" observers of the phenomenon were scheduled for the second part. The second section was never aired. Someone broke into the radio station and stole the tapes!

Jean-Claude Bourret sent the following explanation to Gordon Creighton, the distinguished British UFO authority: "Unfortunately, on Monday, March 18, 1974, a mysterious burglar carried off all the tapes that were still waiting to be broadcast. That this was an act of deliberate malevolence is beyond question… There were two piles side by side: those interviews that had already gone out, and those that were still to be broadcast. Only this second pile was taken." What was the gist of the tapes? Like most of the professional scientists and journalists who have undertaken a serious study of UFOs, Dr. Hynek, Jacques Vallee, and their colleagues have found the popular extraterrestrial hypothesis untenable. For some time now, they have been weighing the awesome alternative: that UFOs are earthly in origin, are accompanied by so-called psychic manifestations, and are produced by complex distortions of space, time, and even of reality itself.

"What the theft was designed to prevent," Creighton notes, "was the dissemination to millions of European listeners that similar views about UFOs are held by foreign experts of the caliber of Dr. J. Allen Hynek. It looks as though 'somebody' is mighty anxious that we Earthlings do not learn the truth about 'something' which, I suggest, might relate to the 64-billion-dollar question: who owns and controls this planet…and us?"

Who, indeed, has the ability to control the mails, the telephones, and radio and television stations worldwide? Are people from some distant planet traveling the backroads of Long Island in black Cadillacs, or was Ivan Sanderson right? Are we dealing with beings that originate on our own planet? Someone has tried very hard for years to convince us that those strange things in our skies are harmless spaceships from some distant world. So long as we believe it, and believe that they originate from far beyond our pitiful reach, we seem to be relatively safe. But when we look in the wrong direction – towards Earth itself – there comes a heavy knock on our door in the middle of the night.

CHAPTER 5

"CONTACTEE" RUSTLING – 1979 LECTURE

Those of you who've read some of my books know that I'm a growing skeptic. I started out as a great believer, and I've gradually turned into a skeptic as my investigations have progressed. I'm going to try to explain to you today some of those investigations and why they have made me skeptical of the basic flying saucer premise. That basic premise, of course, is that these things are from outer space. There's no question that there are strange things in the sky, but where they come from and what they're doing here is wide open. We know very little about them after 35 or 40 years of investigation. Our main problem, as I've stated in a number of books and articles, is that the will to believe is much stronger than the will to understand. People are very quick to accept a belief without any evidence. Sometimes with no evidence at all... A lot of our major religions are based on that strange ability of the human mind to accept such beliefs.

Harry Houdini, back in the '20s, became a good friend of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle. Sir Arthur Conan Doyle was the creator of Sherlock Holmes. Harry Houdini, of course, was the great escape artist. Arthur Conan Doyle was also a famous investigator of psychic phenomenon in that era. He decided that Harry Houdini was not a magician at all, but a psychic. Doyle believed Houdini wasn't just escaping from these boxes and things; he was dematerializing and materializing outside the boxes. So he approached Harry Houdini with this theory and Houdini laughed at him saying, "That's nonsense, I use simple trickery to get out of these boxes." But Arthur Conan Doyle was convinced that Harry Houdini was a medium, and he stated this in some books and magazine articles. Harry Houdini got so mad that he broke off his relationship with Doyle. Doyle refused to believe that these were magic tricks…

Now, with flying saucers, we have a similar situation. We have been accepting, at face value, a lot of the things that have been said. I'd say 98% of the literature on flying saucers is absolute garbage. I know because I've had to read all of it over the years. When you try to track down some of these things (especially things that happened some years ago), you either end up at a blank

wall or you find that it was much different from what was reported in the flying saucer magazines of that time. There are great dissimilarities. So after a lot of bad experiences, I decided to investigate only things that hadn't received any publicity and had happened very recently. And that got me into the Mothman mess. I went down to West Virginia many items and tried to find out what was happening there. There were flying saucer sightings galore. In fact, I saw so many myself down there that I actually lost count. To a skeptic, this seems incredible. Once, in Washington, D.C., I made that statement when the skeptic, Phil Klass, was in the audience. He stood up and said in a very loud voice, "That man is a terrible liar!" And he stalked out of the hall.

But when you're in an area where there is a UFO wave going on, you're bound to see them. They were following a schedule in West Virginia. Every night at 8:30, you could go out and look up at the sky and one would go over. There were people with private airplanes chasing the damn things. Of course, they always got away, and we never solved the mystery. Then I discovered that at 10:00 on Wednesday nights, we seemed to have more activity than any other period of time. I mentioned this on a television station down in West Virginia. The next Wednesday night, half the country was out looking at the sky. Thank god, three of them went over in formation at 10:00 on Wednesday night. I was then considered a great seer, because I had managed to figure this out.

There are a lot of other patterns to the phenomenon, which we can figure out if we lend ourselves to it. Going back through history, I have found that these patterns are continuous. I had to do some research into the Great Plague of the 1300s. I kept coming across references to strange atmospheric phenomenon. I kept digging into more and more books trying to find out what kind of strange atmospheric phenomenon they were talking about. It was taking place while everybody was dropping dead with the Plague. I finally found some references that described very large bright lights that were flying around these cities, especially where people were dying in droves. At that time, they assumed that it was some kind of religious phenomenon related to all the deaths that were taking place. The Indians had a belief that these were "sky ships" taking souls away into space after they died… In the '60s, we had a great many sightings directly over funeral homes and mental hospitals. I could never figure that out, either. Why funeral homes and mental hospitals? In the mental hospitals, the doctors and the nurses would be reporting these UFOs (not the inmates). Maybe there were inmates there that the UFOs were interested in. Inmates who

had read some of my books or something… [laughter]

I felt that the one thing that had not been properly investigated were the contactees themselves. Since we never managed to catch a flying saucer, our best evidence was the contactee. At that time in the 1960s, contactees were frowned upon. They were ridiculed. They were attacked at every corner. There were 2 or 3 contactees who had gotten rather famous, and this really irked some of the more prominent ufologists (who were very publicity-minded). There were contactees like George Adamski, who became very famous. He was much slandered and, so, towards the end of his life, he denied everything. He thought that he had been used in some fashion. He didn't know how he had been used, but he thought something very fishy was going on – that many of the things he had believed earlier about flying saucers were wrong. But he couldn't figure out what was really going on.

I started interviewing contactees. And because of my magazine articles about contactees, more contactees would write to me. In fact, I was swamped with letters from all over the country. Some people had had experiences 20 years earlier, and had never told anyone, because they didn't know exactly who to tell. Finally they'd read an article by me about contactees, and decide to get in touch with me. In the end, I dealt with probably five or six hundred people who had had some kind of contactee experience. I lost count. There were hundreds of others that I could never visit personally, or talk to on the telephone, but with whom I corresponded briefly.

I found that there were certain patterns in the contactee phenomenon, which had been deliberately overlooked by the ET believers. There were medical effects that had been deliberately overlooked or missed, because the average UFO investigation was more of a conversation. Nobody ever examined these contactees physically, or even asked them what kind of physical affects they had suffered after their experience. It was virgin territory at that time. Fortunately, around the country there are quite a few doctors and psychologists now doing the same thing that I was doing then. But it was a long, uphill battle in the '60s to get anyone to pay any attention to the contactees. They were really scorned, yet they hold many of the keys to the UFO phenomenon.

There are six basic types of contactees. Not just one, as you'd think. There are six types, with a couple of subgroups. I'll try to explain each type and their medical characteristics.

TYPE 1: TRANCE CONTACTEES

The first type, Type 1, is a trance subject. This is, I've found, the most prevalent type. Usually this witness claims that he's suffered paralysis – that he was unable to move a muscle or even blink his eyes. This is a sure sign that he was in a trance. We have religious miracles (name any date, they're going on all the time) like the one in 1962 in Garabandal, Spain. Two small children would go out into a field and kneel by a bush for five or six hours. They would be in a complete trance. Hundreds of people would mill around them, watching this. When they came out of the trance, they would tell that they had had a long conversation with the "lady" that was visiting them.

This happens over and over again in religious miracles. People are actually in a trance, but they don't know they're in a trance. They think they're fully conscious. In hypnotherapy, a person will often be hypnotized and be "under" for two hours. When you bring him out of hypnosis, he doesn't think that he's been under for two seconds. If you tell him that he's been hypnotized, he'll argue with you. He'll say, "No, I couldn't have been hypnotized," until he looks at the clock and realizes that two hours have passed.

We see this over and over again in the UFO cases. People will be driving along a highway (always a secluded highway with no other cars on it) and they will see something in the sky. On rare occasions, it will be a metallic object but, mostly, it's a light, and the light is flashing. Now, some people can be hypnotized very easily with a flashing light if it flashes at a certain number of intervals. I used to use a strobe light in my investigations. It had an adjustment on it so that it would flash at different frequencies. I would set this up and have the contactee look at it. I would adjust the frequency until the contactee would go off like that, hypnotized. This is what happens with these lights. They're driving along a highway. They see this light. It's flashing, and suddenly they're in a hypnotic trance. Now an hour later, or two hours later, or a day later, they come out of the trance and they find that they're forty miles away from where they had been. Also, they find that it's taken them three hours to travel a distance that normally would take them thirty minutes. They're baffled by it.

In the beginning, the UFO investigators were baffled by it too, because they didn't know anything about hypnosis, or about trance subjects or fairy lore. We have to take the "little people" seriously, because there's an enormous amount of literature on them. More than there is on UFOs... The best minds of each

generation have gone out and investigated fairies. There is a newsletter in England devoted to new sightings of the little people. It just goes on and on… Go to any good bookstore and pick up a book on fairy lore, and you'll find that it is divided into sections just like the UFO books. There will be a chapter on time lapses. There will be a chapter on abductions. There will be a chapter on sexual experiences. And when you read it, you'll think you're reading a flying saucer book, except it's all done in the fairy frame of reference. In the Middle Ages, the belief in fairies was very big. The fairy lights were also mentioned throughout this literature. These lights were, of course, the same thing that we're seeing today: mysterious lights that blink on and off and put you in a hypnotic trance.

When you're in this hypnotic trance and you think you're conscious, you can see almost anything, and you will swear that it's real. When you come out of the trance, you'll swear, "I just saw an elephant walking down Main Street." Of course, there was no elephant. Incidentally, every year we have dinosaur reports. In Italy, they turned out the Army a couple of years ago to chase a dinosaur. Of course, they never caught it. I really wonder what would happen if they had come upon this living dinosaur. They wouldn't want to shoot it, and I don't know of any way to catch a dinosaur. I think that the Army would have been in real trouble. [laughter]

What fascinates me are the kangaroo reports that we get every year from all over the country. We know there are no kangaroos in the United States, but the police are chasing them every year. We have not just Mothmen running around, but we have kangaroos, dinosaurs, and a wide variety of sea serpents. I am very interested in herpetology (snakes). I used to lecture on snakes. People used to come up to me afterwards and tell their snake stories, about the gigantic snakes that had been seen – snakes that we know are not to be found anywhere in the United States.

Anyway, the trance subject is set off by this flashing light. We do not know the source of this light. You can say they're from outer space; you can say they're fairies; you can say they're demons. It doesn't matter. We don't have an explanation for it. We just know that that is how it works. That's the mechanism. And that's only the first one.

TYPE 2: POST - HYPNOTIC CONTACTEES

The second type of subject is the post-hypnotic subject. Most of you know about post-hypnotic suggestion. When someone is hypnotized you tell them, "one hour after you wake up, I want you to stand up on a table and crow like a rooster." One hour later, the subject is fully awake and all of a sudden, he doesn't understand why he has this terrible urge to stand up on a table and crow like a rooster. That is post-hypnotic suggestion. We have that in the flying saucer phenomenon, on a large scale. This is where the witnesses just need a slight trigger. It doesn't have to be a flashing light. It can be something else. It can be a sound over a radio or telephone that triggers them and puts them back into a trance. During this momentary trance, they will see something that isn't there at all. One common trigger that's used is Greek letters and Greek words. We don't know why... UFO entities for years have been using Greek names and Greek letters. One of them called themselves "Xeno." This was widely published for weeks before anyone realized that Xeno was the Greek word for "stranger." It's just Greek. Are we being invaded by Greeks from outer space? I doubt it.

In a typical case of this sort, the person will say that he was driving past, say, a billboard. He looked at the billboard and the next thing he knew, he saw this huge saucer directly over the billboard. It was a huge machine with legs sticking out of it and people waving from the windows. Actually, it's the billboard that set him off. There was some word or letter on the billboard that triggered the post-hypnotic suggestion.

In investigating this type of case, I have to go over their whole life history. I do that anyway with every case but, here, you have to try to find some point in the past couple of years where they have lost some time. Usually it was where they had taken one of these drives and discovered it took them two hours to travel a distance that should have taken them thirty minutes. One has to assume that during these mysterious two hours, something happened to them. The post-hypnotic suggestion was implanted in their mind. Two years later, they come out with this absurd story. This is also a device that's very handy for discrediting witnesses. Suppose someone has had this experience where they lost three hours. They go to me, or Dr. Hynek, or someone else and complain about it. We start investigating it. One day they call up and say, "I just saw this giant kangaroo jumping across the road." The reason they saw the giant kangaroo was that they had been programmed to see it. Naturally we say, "Oh, if he's seeing kangaroos, he must be a nut, so I'm not going to waste any more

time with him." But it's more and more complicated, the deeper you get into it.

TYPE 3: HALLUCINATORY CONTACTEES

We have a category that really is scary, and this is what I call induced hallucinations. This is one I first stumbled across in West Virginia in 1966. I've come across it several times since, including on Long Island and in Ohio, and in some other states. Dr. Vallee has apparently come across it, too. In his book The Invisible College, he has one paragraph devoted to it. In the induced hallucination, you are driving along the highway or hitchhiking or whatever, and you see a light or hear a sound. You go into a trance or you pass out. You are not taken aboard a flying saucer; you are taken aboard a truck or a van. In areas of West Virginia where flying saucer reports were prevalent, in discussing it with people who lived in the area, I learned that there were a lot of mysterious trucks and vans running around. These local people are aware of everything because they live on the backroads; they don't see anything at all for days and days. Suddenly, they'd see a mysterious van passing back and forth. They would take notice of it. These vans, as near as we can figure out, are used to examine people. Many of the abduction cases concern medical examinations. People are taken aboard these vans and they are examined. They are probably given some kind of drug, which we've never been able to isolate. A number of contactees have had some strange substance in their blood that we've never been able to identify. While they're being examined and given these hypnotic drugs, what we call a confabulation is placed in their mind. This is done very easily in hypnosis, or with drugs. You simply tell the person that they have been to another planet, and they believe it when they wake up later on. They can fill in all the details. Their mind will fill in all the details. And they will come up with one hell of a good contact story. But the contact story doesn't mean anything.

Now it took me a long time to get wise to this tactic. Then I realized that there was another memory underneath the confabulation. You have to hypnotize the person many times, over a long period of time, in order to install a second memory hidden below the first memory (the confabulation). The second memory is usually much simpler. It's simply that they are being manhandled and thrown onto this table, and that they're being injected with something. Lights are being flashed in their eyes. They're going through what sounds like a

standard medical examination. Then they're released. But they're released with that memory so buried that they remember only the wonderful trip to another planet. That doesn't mean that all of our contactees who claim to have gone to another planet are victims of this, but it means that most of them are.

The keys to this are the physical sensations that they feel. When you're dreaming and a mosquito comes along and bites you in the eye, you may start having a dream that you are being chased by cannibals with spears. They've stuck you in the eye because your mind is translating that feeling into the dream. This works in much the same way in the UFO contact. The physical sensations are the only important things in these stories. The women, especially, feel that a needle has been thrust into their stomach around the belly button. As you know, Betty Hill claimed that. But there are many other cases of that, and we're baffled by it. One theory is that they're using these long needles to reach the ovaries, and that may be. But I think there must be something else to it, because we find that this "needle in the navel" was important in witchcraft lore, too.

With the men, the physical pains that they feel are often around the fingertips. Needles have been poked into their fingertips. And, by golly, if you look at their fingertips two or three days later, you'll see marks where something has been thrust into their fingertips. Also, with the men, something is placed underneath their chin. There are glands there, and it may be some method of draining substances from these glands. Again, there's no way to speculate, but they do have marks afterwards under their chin, where something has been definitely poked there. There are those who like to yell, "Hoaxes and liars!" But how would someone go about poking themselves under the chin with a hypodermic needle? I think it's a little grizzly. Most people wouldn't do it just to provide evidence.

We don't know what these trucks are up to. We don't know where they're from. We know that a couple of years ago in Montana, they did have signs on the sides that said "Smithsonian Institute." We checked immediately with the Smithsonian, and they didn't have any trucks running around Montana. They didn't know what the hell was going on. So we're dealing with a human-based group. The deeper you get into it, the scarier it gets. Those of you who read Dr. Vallee's latest book know that he now accepts that notion. He believes that it's an old religious cult, which is maybe a workable idea. But it doesn't make too much sense that anyone would go through all that trouble.

In 1967, Russia had an outbreak of flying saucer attacks like this. Russia immediately issued a very long diatribe claiming that the CIA was doing it to Russian citizens, as a method of reviving religion in Russia…

TYPE 3 SUBGROUP: DISTORTIONS OF REALITY

My last book, The 8th Tower, was originally titled Distortions of Reality. I've had a number of cases where people have suffered distortions of reality. In contactee cases, it's common for the people to say that a UFO landed beside the road and took them aboard and so on. When they go back later to find the spot where the UFO landed, they can't find it, even though they know the road like the back of their hand… Betty and Barney Hill went back again and again to the mountains of Vermont, looking for the exact spot where they had seen this UFO. I don't think they ever found that spot. There are many cases of this, because they're suffering from distortions of reality. There could be a house or a landmark that doesn't exist. You go back; you're looking for "the white house with the red shutters." But there is no white house with red shutters, because it never did exist. Ghost stories are filled with cases like this.

These distortions of reality are well known, in every age. In other ages they were often blamed on witchcraft. They would finger the black magicians, or the "X group." The fairies got a lot of the blame during the Middle Ages. There's case after case of distortion of reality in the fairy cases.

TYPE 4: ASTRAL PROJECTION CONTACTEES

There's a couple of other kinds of contactees which, in many ways, are much more interesting than the space contactees. The fourth type is the astral projectionist. We get a lot of this, where people claim to have the ability to project themselves out of their bodies via the "out-of-body experience." They claim that they go to spaceships thousands of miles above the earth that travel to other planets, and so on... Back in the early '70s, Otto Binder, a science writer, was onto a case with a lady who was a marvelous astral projectionist. I have a file at home that's this thick, of transcriptions of things she said while in this state. She would lie down and go into this hypnotic state, and then she would start to describe where her "alter body" was going, and what it was

seeing. It was all very fascinating. At one point, Otto wanted to do a book about it, but it never materialized. With out-of-body experiences, usually the person doing it has a "guide." As soon as he pops out of his body, this guide shows up and conducts him on a tour of space or whatever. The guide usually is an Indian or a Tibetan. But in modern times, we've got a lot of spacemen acting as guides. They usually fit the classic description you find in many of the UFO accounts. Astral projection has to be recognized as part of the UFO phenomenon.

TYPE 5: COSMIC ILLUMINATION CONTACTEE

Now the 5th type, this is a type that we've known about for thousands of years. It's an integral part of every religion. We don't have any idea how it happens, or why it happens. It's called cosmic illumination. This happens to many people who think they're having a UFO experience. They're actually undergoing cosmic illumination. There are libraries of books that will describe it to you in detail. Basically the person is usually alone, and a beam of light will come down out of the sky and touch this person. For a few minutes, this person will be in a different state of consciousness. He will suddenly be aware of everything. Of everything that's ever happened in human history… Of everything that's ever going to happen… He will be totally aware of his linkage with the entire human race. It's the kind of experience that people who take drugs want to have, but seldom do.

And it's a total experience. It happens very briefly, sometimes in only ten seconds. When the light ceases, the person sits down and tries to remember what just happened. But he can't remember any of it. It's all in his unconscious mind. This happens to millions of people in every generation. It's studied by every great church. As I say, there are libraries of books about this. The person's IQ usually skyrockets immediately after this has happened. Their personality changes; their consciousness changes... Very often they change their whole life. They will quit their job. They'll divorce their wife or their husband. They'll start a whole new life. In many cases, they'll even change their name. As I say, this is not a rare experience. It's a common experience, except that when it happens to somebody, they usually don't talk about it very much. They don't end up on 60 Minutes talking about it.

But people today often associate cosmic illumination with UFOs. They may have seen a UFO or a mysterious light earlier that night. Then suddenly, they find themselves bathed in this (usually) reddish light, and they think that the UFOs are doing it to them. But we don't know who is doing it to them. We just know that there is a force on this earth that is constantly manipulating the human race, reprogramming us, changing us for good or bad, directing us towards a destiny that we can't define. It knows what it's doing, but we do not.

TYPE 5 SUBGROUP: FALSE ILLUMINATION

Unfortunately, there is another subcategory called false illumination. This is when the contactee goes bananas afterwards. It destroys their life. They become fanatics. They become religious fanatics, or they become political fanatics of one type or another. It's a reprogramming process. Their whole mind is reprogrammed. Maybe this false illumination is just an example of the programming "missing" somehow (i.e., an attempt at cosmic illumination doesn't "take"). Or maybe it is caused by some other force.

TYPE 6: THE "GENUINE" CONTACTEE

The last type would be the genuine contactee. That is, a flying saucer lands, a door opens, and the contactee walks through the door and is taken for a ride with normal-looking, English-speaking pilots. We have hundreds and hundreds of reports of this from people who claim this has happened to them. We usually have good reason for disbelieving them, but there is a chance that it might happen. If there is any reality to UFOs at all, it must have happened. It might happen tomorrow. So that would be our 6th type, the most rare type.

In the 1950s, the government was very interested in the contactee phenomenon. The so-called "scientific" ufologist wouldn't touch a contactee with a hundred-foot pole in those days, but the Air Force was very interested. In 1957, there was a big UFO wave. There was a rash of landings in November of that year, and a rash of contactee stories around the country. The Air Force collected a number of these contactees and put them in mental hospitals, where they were subjected to the very same kinds of tests I subjected them to twenty years later. In talking to these old-time contactees about their experiences, I discovered

that they were in the hospital for 5 or 6 days before being released. When they told the ufologists about it, the ufologists hit the roof, thinking that this was an attempt to discredit the whole situation. But it seems to me that the Air Force, or the government, knew exactly what the hell it was doing (which is more than I can say for it now).

Somebody in the Air Force at that time realized that there was some psychological factor to this, some psychic factor that had to be explored. They were collecting these contactees and putting them through a rigorous testing process to find out just what the hell really happened to them… The files on all these people are probably long gone, but we do have some evidence. We know that in the early 1950s, around 1949 and 1950, there were mysterious men running around who were definitely from the government. The CIA in those days was just a small organization called the CIG. In 1952, this kind of government activity suddenly ceased. So we can assume that by 1952, the CIA had found out something either very negative or very positive and said, "Let's publicly drop the whole bloody thing." From 1952 on, the Air Force's Project Blue Book was a sham. It was run by a Master Sergeant, named Moody, who was very anti-UFO. I don't want him to sue me, so I'll just say that he was a bit of a jerk. They had various officers who claimed to be the head of Project Blue Book. They checked in only once a month or something. They didn't pay any attention to it.

The files of Project Blue Book were in worse shape than any amateur ufologist's files. You couldn't find anything in them. There would be missing pages and things that had been torn out and crossed out. It was a mess. Project Blue Book was just a joke. During all of this business in West Virginia, I called the Air Force in Columbus, Ohio, and asked them if they could give us any kind of help, or even send airplanes over. We knew the UFOs were coming over at 8:30 every night. A jet plane ought to be able to chase one of them. The Air Force was strictly disinterested. They didn't want to be bothered…

Some contactees have claimed the ability to "call" UFOs. Unfortunately, I've been present when this has happened. I can only say that it has happened. Woodrow Derenberger in West Virginia claimed that he could tell when the UFOs were around, through telepathy. He said that he could call to them telepathically and, by golly, he did it in my presence (and a lot of other peoples')! These lights would suddenly appear in the sky when he would concentrate. It has to be a form of psychic ability. I don't think that most people

can go out and summon a UFO. It would have to be a contactee…

By the way, there are three international holidays that are based on the flying saucer phenomenon. We don't have much time now to go into that, but the three holidays are:

> 1) The winter solstice, which takes place around Christmas week, when we have massive UFO waves every 4 or 5 years…
>
> 2) The vernal equinox, which is based on the ancient Phoenician goddess of Ashtar, who is now well known in ufology because so many contactees claim to have talked to Ashtar. This goes way back. Ashtar has been dominating the scene for thousands of years. Ashtar is, of course, Easter. In Europe, the word for Ashtar is Easter, the goddess of fertility. That's why we have the Easter eggs and so forth.
>
> 3) The summer solstice, which is around the end of June. That's when the whole UFO thing started in 1947, with the sightings on June 24th. The winter solstice is the shortest day of the month. The summer solstice is the longest day of the month… On the vernal equinox, we have night and day equal.

Mexico is a hotbed of flying saucer reports. They've also had cattle mutilations there. Also, a human body was found mutilated in the same way as the cattle. It was cut in half and some of the organs were missing…

There is a former Jesuit priest who has been investigating that. He came to New York a couple of years ago, and showed me a lot of really horrible photographs and things. My memory now is a little vague... It seems to me that a child and a man were involved; both were cut in half. There was something else involving an automobile that had hit a man in the road. The driver stopped, and when they got out, they found that the man was long dead. He had been terribly mutilated previously.

This is all very weird. How could he have been standing in the road if he had been so mutilated? Perhaps some Mexican magazines have carried more detailed reports, but I don't know of it. I wish somebody would go down there and really find out what is going on. Now the cattle mutilations are going on in Canada. The cattle are having all their blood drained from their bodies, and

their sex organs removed. God knows, but somebody's got a collection of 500,000 cattle sex organs.

Closer to home, in New Jersey, two mutilated humans were found earlier this year. Their bodies were mutilated, and the blood had been drained from their bodies. It was in the newspapers.

There's a Paris, TX, newsletter devoted to this, called Stigmata. There are very good investigators working on this out west. You'll find horrifying Men in Black stories taking place in those areas where the mutilations are going on.

In the Middle ages, in France, strange flying objects used to appear. Every once in a while, the people of France would catch one of the pilots and, usually, stone him to death. In the Middle Ages, they believed that these aircraft came from a place called "Magonia." They thought Magonia was a marvelous land in the sky…

The cattle mutilations are the only physical evidence we have. We don't have a workable theory for these mutilations. I've run through all the theories and none of them work. We don't know who's collecting all this blood, or why. But because it is the only physical evidence we have, we must go on studying it.

Just recently, the government gave $48,000 to a retired FBI man in New Mexico. He was going to get to the bottom of it. He made a few phone calls, collected his $48,000, and said, "These mutilations are being caused by predators like wolves and such." And that was the end of that big experiment.

Cattle mutilations really started coming back about five years ago. I don't have time to get into it all right now but, at the time, I wrote a brief article for my newsletter Anomaly, which went into some of the specifics…

CATTLE MUTILATION FOR BEGINNERS – ANOMALY #11, APRIL 1974

The great UFO wave of 1973 began in the northeast in February, and was marked by the reintroduction of phantom helicopters – large, unmarked machines whose configurations and sounds are unmistakable. As usual, when witnesses like Evan C. Williams, mayor of Milton, PA, reported seeing one of the choppers, a thorough check of all airports and military installations drew a blank.

By midsummer, however, the phantom helicopters were being associated with the widespread cattle rustling in the Midwest. Huge military-type helicopters were seen hovering low over cattle herds in several states. Farmers were even taking potshots at them. The whirlybirds were operating at night, without lights, in rural areas.

"We were near Jones' place southeast of town, and came around a curve, up over a hill," Rev. Albert Lambeth of Mark, Iowa said in April. "Then this helicopter started to raise out of the field right in front of us. It hovered over our heads a few seconds. When we got out of the car, we could see the tail structure and the fuselage structure. It wasn't one of those bubble-type copters. It had an enclosed fuselage that I would guess could carry four or five men. And there were not visible numbers on the helicopter."

Local law officials, the FAA, and FBI all failed to pinpoint the origin of these choppers, although they were apparently the size of military ambulance copters, and would have required a lot of fuel and logistical support.

We had gone through it all before. We had pursued phantom helicopters up and down the East Coast in 1966-67, and cited a number of these cases in our books and articles.

In October, at the height of the UFO flap in the United States, a curious UPI report appeared, describing two "mystery helicopters" seen near Saigon.

An estimated $30 million worth of cattle are rustled in the U.S. annually. Modern cattle rustlers are very professional and very efficient. They drive their trucks into a field, slaughter several choice cows, and butcher them on the spot, loading only the prime cuts into their vehicles. They leave hides, forequarters, etc., behind, along with plenty of foot and tire tracks. It is questionable if several different teams in different states could suddenly acquire expensive helicopters. Our phantom helicopters were turning up everywhere at once this summer.

As in previous UFO waves, somebody or some thing was wantonly slaughtering cattle, sheep, and dogs across the country throughout 1973. Unlike mundane cattle rustlers, these phantom animal mutilators did not leave any tracks or clues behind, even in mud and snow. The animals were killed with surgical precision, just as in many cases described in our books. Most perplexing of all, there was never any blood in evidence. Real cattle rustlers

leave plenty of blood behind.

The phenomenon spread across the country, from California to New York. Some lawmen speculated they were dealing with a devil-worshipping cult. But we have seen the results of sacrificial rites in cemeteries and on beaches; the sacrificed animals were always slaughtered crudely, clumsily, bloodily, and were left surrounded by spent candles and other debris.

A news story from Kansas tells us how the destroyed animals had one ear and/or their tail cut off. In some cases, their sex organs were also mutilated. Animals examined in Minnesota bore this same puzzling "trademark."

This mystery is not confined to the U.S. In 1972, there were at least six similar cases in Sweden.

The year 1973 produced an unusual number of tall, hairy monster sightings. And, as usual, dogs and small domestic animals vanished in areas where many of these monster sightings took place. In some cases (i.e., Murphysboro, IL), witnesses claimed the creature they saw was carrying a dead dog under its arm! Yet no one has ever found a half-eaten dog carcass in one of these places, or even the bones. Do our resident monsters even eat meat or bones?

Fortunately, there have not been any verifiable reports of human mutilations in UFO flap areas, but there have been several rather mysterious deaths. Some were apparently caused by lightning, but others resulted from concussion, distinguishable by bleeding from the nose, mouth, and ears.

The 1973 UFO wave followed the basic patterns. As in earlier flaps, the key witnesses were schoolteachers. Decoy manifestations (such as the now-famous Pascagoula, Mississippi case involving two fisherman) diverted the press and generated more "outer space" propaganda, just as the sheriffs of the Midwest went hunting for "rustlers" and "devil cultists."

The UFO phenomenon also picked up in other places, such as South America and Scandinavia. Mystery submarines reappeared in the Norwegian fjords in November, driving the Norwegian Navy bananas. New HITI (holes in the ice) turned up in several Swedish lakes in Jan. '74, prompting new official investigations. It was all very hush-hush.

In 1973, there was a sharp increase in cases in which UFO witnesses received mysterious red marks on their neck, on the major nerve just below the ear.

Persons suffering such marks usually have absolutely no memory of the period when they acquired it. They simply see a strange light or object approaching their car and then – zap – the next thing they know, they are home in their own bed, wondering if it was all just a dream.

CHAPTER 6

THE FLYING SAUCER EVIDENCE EVERYONE IGNORES – SAGA MAGAZINE, JUNE 1973

Somewhere in California, the U.S. Air Force maintains a warehouse full of carefully catalogued scraps of metal, and at least one completely intact flying saucer. In that same warehouse, there are several glass tanks of formaldehyde containing the bodies of a group of tiny humanoids retrieved from a UFO that crashed in the Southwest in the late 1940s.

At least, that's the story that's been handed down by some American ufologists for the past 25 years. And, like a great many popular flying saucer beliefs, it's all fiction. It was originated partly in a newspaper hoax first published in Mexico. It was given immortality by humorist Frank Scully in his 1950 bestseller Behind the Flying Saucers. Scully first heard the rumor from an oilman who said he had gotten it straight from a flying saucer pilot. Later, after Scully's sources had been tracked down and exposed by other reporters, he publicly repudiated the whole thing. But the rumor goes marching on; the Air Force still receives letters from newcomers to the UFO scene demanding the truth about those pickled spacemen. When Air Force public relations officers reply that there is no substance to the rumor, the UFO enthusiasts howl, "Coverup!" and accuse the government of keeping evidence of the existence of extraterrestrial flying saucers from the public.

A far more bitter truth is the sobering fact that the UFO enthusiasts and their organizations have overlooked a mountain of evidence themselves, often suppressing such evidence because it doesn't conform with their dogged belief in extraterrestrial visitations. If they had systematically collected all the physical materials dropped from flying saucers in the past 25 years, they would now have their own warehouse full of proof.

The problem is most of the debris found in the wake of UFO sightings and landings turns out to be rather ordinary – largely aluminum, magnesium, and silicon. These are common earthly materials. The UFO enthusiasts have been looking for, and expecting, something far more exotic.

Unfortunately, after all these years of research, study, and investigation by thousands of people and scores of scientists operating outside the Air Force and government, there is still no evidence to back up the notion that flying saucers come from outer space. There is, on the other hand, considerable evidence that real UFOs are of earthly manufacture and are piloted by normal human beings (excluding those landings and contacts that seem more in the nature of psychic or psychological phenomena). What's more, there is evidence that persons who dress and look like us (and probably are earthlings) are often engaged in collecting UFO artifacts, arriving on the scene before the original witnesses have had a chance to tell anyone about what they have just seen.

Today, it's popular for ufologists to speculate that the CIA is responsible for some of these mysterious events. But the CIA didn't come into being until 1947, and these strange Men in Black (MIB) were busy 50 years before that, during the UFO waves of 1896-97 and 1909!

Shortly after a UFO landing in Wales in May 1909, a clerk reported that he had seen five "foreigners" at the site, taking measurements and snapping pictures (UK Daily Mail, May 20, 1909). There have been thousands of similar stories since then. They have produced an elaborate lore and inspired acute paranoia among many ufologists. No one has yet managed to resolve the simple basic question: who are these "foreigners" and what is their purpose and interest?

These mystery men show a peculiar penchant for visiting isolated areas in northern Canada, Alaska, South America, and other out-of-the-way places. Usually, investigators stumble across their trail rather accidentally, and then labor to find an acceptable frame of reference for them. The CIA takes a good deal of the blame today, even in Spain.

A number of Spanish ufologists are convinced that the CIA is playing games with them, trying to interfere with their contacts with an interplanetary race from Ummo. In case you have never heard of Ummo, it is supposed to be a planet revolving around a star called "Wolf 424," about 14 light-years from earth. The Ummoans have been leading persistent Spanish investigators on a merry chase for several years.

The Ummoans have supplied us with some first-rate physical evidence, neatly embossed with their symbol. They even correspond with Spanish ufologists,

stamping the pages of their letters with the symbol. This may sound ridiculous, but the whole story is quite bizarre and impressive.

On Feb. 6, 1966, a circular flying object made a brief landing near the village of Aluche, a suburb of Madrid. It was seen by a group of soldiers at an ammunition dump, and by several civilians as well. As it took off and flew overhead, the witnesses reported seeing a large symbol on the belly of the saucer. It resembled two curved lines with a straight line between them. The sighting was widely publicized in Spain at the time. (And, of course, that was the year in which widespread sightings in the U.S. were making headlines.)

Sixteen months later, on June 1, 1967, another saucer-shaped object bounced at treetop level over the Madrid suburb of San Jose de Valderas. Again, this was a multiple-witness event with unrelated people reporting the object from several different positions. Like the Aluche saucer, this one bore a large symbol on its underside – two curved lines with a straight line between them.

Symbols have been observed on UFOs before and since, but this is one of the rare cases in which the same symbol has appeared in two different incidents. A wide variety of markings (crosses, squares, semicircles with arrows in them, Greek-like letters, etc.) have been seen only once over the years.

Two of the people in San Jose de Valderas had cameras and snapped photos of the object. One set of negatives was later turned over to the photo editor of the newspaper Informaciones. The other photographer, Antonio Pardo, sent his pictures to Marius Lieget, author of a book on flying saucers. The photos show a standard saucer-shaped object with wide rim in the center. The symbol is clearly visible in one picture.

About three miles from San Jose de Valderas, the object landed near a restaurant called La Ponderosa. Its flight had been seen by a large number of people, including the students of Convent College. When the local people went out to investigate, they found three rectangular marks in the soil, forming an equilateral triangle with sides measuring about 18 feet. They also found a number of small metal tubes scattered around the site. Antonio Pardo later claimed he bought one of these tubes from a local boy. The boy told Pardo he had opened it with a pair of pliers, and found it contained a liquid that quickly evaporated. It also contained two green plastic strips, each stamped with a symbol like the one seen on the saucer.

A few days later, the people in the area received printed circulars offering a reward of 18,000 pasetas (about $260 at that time) for each tube forwarded to one Henri Dagousset at a post office box in Madrid. The circular contained a photograph of one of the tubes and details of its size. Later efforts to locate Dagousset failed. So the mystery remains: who was he, and why was he offering such a large sum for the tubes?

Pardo's tube was submitted to the Spanish National Technical Institute for Aeronautics and Space Research. Their analysis stated the tube was made of "nickel of an extraordinarily high degree of purity." The plastic was polyvinyl fluoride. It was not available commercially, but the Dupont Company in the U.S. was then making small quantities of polyvinyl fluoride for missile nose cones! No one else was manufacturing the stuff. So how did these samples of a classified material end up in a field near Spain?

Nickel tubes of high purity have another use. They are an important component of the machinery used to handle fluoride gasses in the manufacture of fissionable materials for our atomic missiles and bombs.

Although two Spanish ufologists, Rafael Farriols and Antonio Liobet, found many reliable witnesses to the overflight and landing of the object, Antonio Pardo became something of a mystery man. After he sent the photographs and tube to Lieget, he seems to have vanished.

In the aforementioned landing in Wales in 1909, the occupants of the strange flying machine left behind a mess of junk including a spare part for a tire valve manufactured in France, but not distributed in Wales. Apparently this was a ploy to lead the witnesses into thinking they had seen a French flying machine (aeronautical historians reject this possibility).

But the mystery guests overplayed their hand. On May 7, 1909, Egerton S. Free of Clacton-on-Sea, Essex, England, reportedly saw a long, sausage-shaped dirigible hovering about 60 feet above the ground. When his wife checked the spot, she found a steel and rubber bag, five feet long, weighing 35 pounds. It was stamped with the words "Muller Fabrik Bremen," so when free discussed his sighting with newspapermen, he automatically speculated that the mysterious dirigible had come from Germany.

A few days later, two strangers, "foreigners," appeared at the Free estate, studied the beach where the object had hovered, and closely examined the

area.

“The men hovered about my house persistently for five hours,” Free said in an article in the East Anglian Daily Times, May 18, 1909. “When the servant girl set out to church, she heard them conversing in a foreign tongue. Finally they came up to her, one on each side, and one of the men spoke to her in a strange language. The girl was so frightened that she ran back to my house, and would not again leave for church.” (We are indebted to British researcher Cal Grove for uncovering this report, and about 30 others from the year 1909.)

Incidentally, the steel and rubber object was eventually identified as part of a target used by the Royal Navy for gunnery practice.

A subtle variation of this particular game was repeated many times in the U.S. and Europe during the 1960s. After a rash of sightings in the area, a conventional weather balloon would conveniently turn up in some conspicuous spot. (One was even found on the front lawn of a small-town mayor in Ohio.) The police and newspapers would pounce on the balloon with glee and announce that the mystery had been solved. But in investigating many of these weather balloon cases, we had to conclude that the balloons were deliberately planted. By whom? Perhaps by whoever planted the tire valve in Wales and the gunnery target in Essex.

Perhaps UFOs have been using the old “crippled submarine” tactic over these many years. That is, they have been dumping all kinds of extraneous garbage across the landscape to confuse and mislead us, just as our submarines released oil and debris in WWII when under attack. The fact that so much of this UFO debris consists of ordinary earthly materials has led many investigators to erroneously label authentic UFO sightings and landings as hoaxes. The “hardware boys,” as the evidence-seeking ufologists are called, have been blindly seeking exotic, non-earthly materials and rejecting everything else.

One of the first pieces of evidence was “a large wheel made of aluminum, about three feet in diameter, and turbine in shape” that was dropped rather deliberately at the feet of a farmer in Pennfield, MI, in April 1897. According to the testimony of George Parks, published in the Detroit Evening News, April 15, 1897, he and his wife observed “a very bright object that appeared to be about 100 feet from the earth and swiftly approaching.” It made a

humming sound and dropped the wheel as it passed overhead. There was a massive wave of sightings of strange flying machines throughout the U.S. that year. Since it is illogical that any "spaceship" constructed by a "superior technology" could travel all the way to this planet and then fall apart so easily, we can only assume that such incidents have been very deliberate.

Since 1897 it has been a common practice for UFOs to discharge mundane materials at their landing sites. The 1909 French tire valve was just the beginning. In more recent times, these drops have consisted of more sophisticated materials.

Frequently a major UFO sighting with multiple witnesses will be followed by a series of weird manipulations designed to discredit the witnesses and cast doubt on the whole event. The record shows that even official investigators for the U.S. Air Force were often taken in by such manipulations in the 1950s, and this undoubtedly contributed to the government's "negative" stance. For example, Air Force investigators discredited an alleged UFO landing at Glassboro, NJ in 1964 because they found a small quantity of potassium nitrate at the site. Although there were holes in the ground, identical in size and shape to the holes found at other landing sites, and the surrounding trees were damaged, the Air Force decided that the existence of potassium nitrate – commonly used in explosives – was proof of a human hoax. But similar chemicals have been found at other sites around the world.

Various amateur UFO organizations have long accused the Air Force of "covering up" by accepting lame explanations for these events. But anyone who knows how the government and the military really work can see that officialdom was actually taken in by these deceptions and manipulations. The source of the UFO phenomenon – whatever or whoever it may be – is extremely clever, and very skilled in the use of psychological warfare. To them, it was desirable for the Air Force and government to reject and ignore the UFO phenomenon. This was accomplished in a long series of "hoaxes" throughout the 1940s and early 1950s until, by 1955, the official investigators became totally disgusted and negative. Once the ufonauts got the government off their backs, they could operate with impunity. The Air Force "investigations" became superficial public relations efforts after 1955. They had "bought" the phony evidence dumped on their doorstep.

If an officer of the U.S. Air Force had visited the UFO site near Madrid, he

would have undoubtedly classified the whole affair a hoax. The presence of the nickel tubes would have been his proof. He would not ask, of course, how rare and precious missile nose-cone material could turn up in Spain. These tubes might have ended up in some Spanish basement, or the local garbage dump, if the mysterious Mr. Dagousset had not deliberately called attention to them and offered a large reward for their recovery. The detailed circulars distributed in the area were probably designed to focus attention on the tubes.

It's quite possible that Antonio Pardo (a name as common in Spain as "John Smith" is in the U.S.) and Dagousset were either working together or were one and the same man. There is no way of knowing if the tube Pardo sent to author Lieget was, in fact, one of the tubes that actually turned up at the landing site. The printed pamphlet may have just been a ploy to make the Pardo tube seem authentic. Obviously, whoever printed the pamphlet already knew what the tubes looked like and had one in his possession. So why offer a reward for the recovery of the others?

Finally, such an elaborate and expensive hoax makes no sense at all. Why go through all that trouble to excite and baffle a handful of Spanish ufologists?

The overflight and landing of the object had too many witnesses to easily discredit it. But, as in other incidents, it was possible to create an aftermath of confusion that would generate doubts in official minds. At the same time, the symbol clearly seen on the object could be used to reinforce a new game with the ufologists.

Since 1965, various ufologists in Spain have been receiving letters and phone calls from persons claiming to be spacemen – visitors from the planet Ummo. The letters bear a stamp or seal identical to the symbol seen on the Madrid object. They contain warnings about the CIA (an American agent identified as "Mr. W. Rumsey" is supposed to be working in Spain, trying to track down the Ummoans). Spanish investigators have been in an uproar over the Ummo affair for years. It is even the subject of a book, UMMO: Otro Planeta Habitado by Fernando Sesma.

These "spacemen" hoaxes are a worldwide phenomenon. The author has received many strange letters and phone calls of this sort here in the U.S., sometimes related to material that was then in his typewriter and not shared with anyone! Other investigators in scattered parts of the world have

experienced the same things. The implication is two-fold: ufologists are being watched – kept under surveillance by some mysterious group – and large numbers of "spacemen" are already living among us and freely using our mails and telephones.

Because these "hoaxes" are so widespread, and often so complicated and expensive, it is unlikely they are the product of a few juvenile practical jokers. Rather it seems to be a very well-organized and well-financed effort. When you cut through all the nonsense, the only apparent purpose seems to be to create and sustain belief in "spacemen" and, incidentally, to keep the ufologists wallowing in paranoid confusion. Many American ufologists have fallen for these games and convinced themselves that the U.S. Air Force or the CIA is behind it all. And a number of amateur investigators have even suffered nervous breakdowns and committed suicide.

The belief that "alien" parahumans are living among us is not confined to ufology circles. Numerous religious and occult groups have claimed for hundreds of years that angels and devils that look and act exactly like us have been in our midst since the dawn of man – shades of The Exorcist… Various UFO contactees claim the "spacemen" have told them that anywhere from 10 to 10 million interplanetary visitors are now residing in our cities. The late Dr. James McDonald, a meteorologist from the Univ. of Arizona who became embroiled in the UFO controversy, privately discussed, in his last years, the possibility that "aliens" were not only present on this planet, but were systematically taking over top posts in the government and military.

The late zoologist, Ivan T. Sanderson, one of the best-known observers of the UFO scene, offered an even more interesting hypothesis. In his book Invisible Residents, he suggested that maybe an elder race developed in the world's oceans while our ancestors were still climbing trees. This race has remained apart from us, but they account for innumerable sightings of unidentified submarines, ships, and flying saucers (which have been seen entering or leaving bodies of water). Since biologists and evolutionists are convinced that life began in the oceans, Sanderson speculated that it would be logical for an advanced race to have its beginnings there. Maybe these "aqua-people" remained at the bottom of the ocean and developed a whole supercivilization there, regarding us as contemptuously and disinterestedly as we do ants.

These theories remain intellectual exercises, since no real evidence has been

uncovered to support them. They are in the same category as the devil theories of earlier religious groups.

Still, we have the many perplexing reports on mystery men of the pre-CIA era, and the staggering problems presented if we accept the popular extraterrestrial (interplanetary) explanation for UFOs. How, for example, would people from another planet come by nickel tubes of polyvinyl fluoride?

If, on the other hand, some UFO enthusiasts have been right in accusing the CIA and Air Force of all these puzzling hoaxes, what would be the government's motive for spending so much time and money on seemingly profitless enterprises? How could they justify such expenditures to congress? And why is it that after 25 years of this, not a single employee or former employee has blown the whistle on the whole project? The government has a hard time keeping anything secret these days. We can probably exclude the government as the culprit. They may have been victimized by the phenomenon (or private interests), just like all the rest of us.

Year after year, the same foolish charade is played out in countries all over the world: a UFO is seen by reliable witnesses. It releases or dumps materials that are eagerly collected by local UFO enthusiasts. They, in turn, give the material to a reputable testing laboratory, often at considerable cost to themselves. The report comes back. The material is nothing but aluminum or tin. Disgustedly, the UFO enthusiasts file away the report and go on with their search for "real evidence."

In Jan. 1971, a blinding light appeared at treetop level over Kuusamo, Saapunki in northeastern Finland. Snow at the spot where the object had hovered was found to have melted and refrozen into strange, dark green crystals. An engineer, Ahti J. Karivieri, collected samples of the ice. An expensive chemical analysis revealing nothing aside from the presence of a small amount of aluminum – unusual in snow. Prof. Hulvio B. Aleixo of Belo Horizonte, Brazil has systematically analyzed the substances left at several UFO landing sites. His findings were equally disappointing to the ET believers.

A crumbling black powder with an acrid, unpleasant smell was found on a football field at Baleia, Brazil, where a UFO allegedly landed on Sept. 14, 1967. The central institute of Geo-Sciences of the Federal University of Minas

Gerais performed an analysis that included radiation tests. They found the powder consisted of iron, aluminum, magnesium, and silica. Similar material found at a landing site near Villa Constitucion contained magnesium, iron, carbon, aluminum, nickel, and copper. At Campo Grande, Brazil, Otaviano Souza Bueno said he saw a luminous object land on a stream bank, and three beings climb out and dig up samples of soil. This was back in 1948... A sample of the same soil was taken and analyzed by the Institute of Technological Research at Sao Paulo. Their findings: silica, 61 percent; aluminum, 19 percent; magnesium, 11 percent.

Thousands of miles away, on Oct. 27, 1954, a formation of glowing objects appeared over a crowded football stadium in Florence, Italy. A shower of shining flakes fell on the crowd from the sky. When these were analyzed by the Chemical Institute of Milan, they were found to be composed of magnesium, iron, silicon, and calcium.

Silica is ordinary sand. Heat it and then cool it, and you have glass. Silicon can be made into all kinds of plastic objects. An almost endless variety of silicon objects and substances have been found at UFO landing sites during the past 25 years. It most often appears as a purplish liquid that resembles ordinary fuel oil. Indeed, it is sometimes mistaken for oil. When a fertilizer salesman named Reinhold Schmidt reported seeing a UFO land near Kearney, Nebraska in 1957, investigating police officers found a puddle of this fluid at the site and accused Schmidt of putting it there himself.

Another outstanding case took place on Aug. 19, 1965 on a farm outside Cherry Creek, NY. Harold Butcher, 16, was milking cows at 8:20 p.m. when the portable radio in the barn was suddenly drowned out by static and the tractor running the milking machine abruptly stopped. Outside, a Holstein bull chained to a steel bar by a ring through its nose began to bellow. Young Butcher ran to the window and looked out. He saw a large, egg-shaped object trailing a reddish vapor and emitting a steady beep-beep sound as it touched down in a nearby field. A few moments later it flew away, Butcher said, leaving behind a strange smell and several globs of a shimmering, purplish liquid. The Kawecki Chemical Company later performed a chemical analysis and found the liquid was composed of silicon, aluminum, and iron.

Another popular UFO dropping is a distinctive silver sand. It has been found in England (1965), and in Iowa (1972). It was also discovered at the site of the

famous Socorro, NM landing in April 1964. Of course, Air Force investigators dismissed it as common silica.

Perhaps the most widespread of all UFO substances is the combination of aluminum and silicon that the people of West Virginia have labeled "space grass." This comes in the form of tiny strands that resemble finely shredded Christmas tinsel. (Incidentally, Christmas tinsel was made of lead until a 1972 health law outlawed it.)

When radar first came into use in WWII, bomber pilots learned to befuddle it by dumping boxes of tinfoil out of their gun ports as they flew over enemy territory. In time, this "chaff" became very sophisticated. It was cut to lengths equaling the wavelength of the enemy radar. Today it is fired out of tubes mounted on a plane's wings. The common practice is to fire the short chaff (less than six inches long) in combination with "rope" (as long as 20 feet). Both materials are made of aluminum and are specially treated so the pieces won't stick together. They are used occasionally on Air Force training missions over the U.S., and are released at high altitude in the vicinity of radar stations. The places naturally scatter over a very wide area, as they are meant to do.

Space grass, on the other hand, often drops to Earth in a big lump. "Rope" is never found near it. In fact, there is not a single case in which "Rope" has been recovered by civilians. Furthermore, while space grass closely resembles Air Force chaff, it is chemically different. The chief ingredients of space grass are, of course, aluminum and silicon. Unlike chaff, it has a tendency to stick together. When freshly dropped space grass is handled, it causes a rash that itches.

Back in 1967, the author asked the Pentagon to furnish samples of chaff for some comparative studies. At first, the request was refused because chaff was supposedly classified. But later, a box of unused chaff (fresh from the manufacturer) was forwarded together with an Air Force map showing all the locations in North America where it is dispersed on training exercises. Interestingly, none of these locations was anywhere near the places where space grass has appeared.

Analyses performed in 1967 produced another puzzle. While space grass was perfectly ordinary in composition, the Aluminum Association had no idea who

made the stuff, or for what purpose. Basically, it is very close to the aluminum foil sold in sheets in supermarkets, but it is much thinner and, like chaff, is cut to precise lengths.

Time and again, witnesses have seen space grass coming from saucer-shaped objects. It has also been found piled up in fields where UFOs have been seen hovering. In 1966-67, quantities of this material were found repeatedly in West Virginia in the wake of UFO sightings. Other outstanding cases include Sagetown, NY (1956); Chosi City, Japan (where hundreds of people saw a circular flying object discharge the stuff over the city in 1956); Merion, PA (1957); and Puerto Garibaldi, Argentina (1965).

Even more odd is the fact that space grass sometimes turns up on porches and under trees where it could not possibly have fallen from the sky! It has also been found neatly scattered over underground telephone lines and draped over power lines.

The controversial Air Force-sponsored UFO study conducted in the 1960s by Colorado University, under the direction of Edward U. Condon, made a superficial study of the "physical evidence" so lovingly collected by UFO enthusiasts, including space grass. Instead of obtaining and studying a recent sample, they examined a 1957 sample found at Manhattan Beach, CA. It had turned up on the property of a witness 24 hours after a sighting. It was nothing but Air Force chaff, but how did it appear where it did, and so soon after a UFO sighting? Who dropped it, or planted it? Where did they obtain it? The Condon committee never addressed itself to such cases. Their conclusion was, "It is certain that this sample of 'space grass' had a quite earthly origin, and was not deposited by vehicles of extraterrestrial origin."

The most celebrated sample of alleged UFO material – a few slivers of pure magnesium – tore the Condon committee apart. Some anonymous person sent the particles of magnesium to a Brazilian columnist, Ibrahim Sued of Rio de Janeiro, together with a letter describing how he had seen a flying disk explode in midair. The particles were supposed to be the remnants. Sued turned the pieces over to the late Dr. Olavo T. Fontes, then one of the world's leading UFO authorities. The samples were analyzed by Brazil's Mineral Production Laboratory. They were found to be unusually pure magnesium. Dr. Fontes sent some of the fragments on to Mr. and Mrs. James Lorenzen at APRO in Tucson, AZ. Further tests verified the original findings. So APRO announced in 1957

this 100 percent pure magnesium could not come from any known manufacturer. Therefore, they hinted, it must have been the product of some superior technology.

Ten years later, these fragments were turned over to Dr. Condon. After running his own tests, Condon concluded, "Since only a few grams of the magnesium are known to exist, and these could easily have been produced prior to 1957 by common earthly technology, the composition and metallographic characteristics of these sample themselves reveal no information about their origin. The mere existence of these samples cannot serve to support an argument that they are fragments from material of extraterrestrial origin."

One of the scientists on Dr. Condon's committee, Dr. David R. Saunders, later questioned this in his book UFOs? Yes!. Saunders felt that the very high purity of the metal was unique. "I can only say," Saunders wrote, "that if the Brazilian fishermen did not really collect fragments from a spaceship, then someone perpetrated one of the most sophisticated scientific hoaxes in history."

There the matter rests. Logically, the samples prove only one thing: that some anonymous person in Brazil in 1957 somehow had access to a small piece of unusually pure magnesium. Instead of sending it to the government or to a Brazilian scientist with a known interest in UFOs, this person chose to mail it to a gossip columnist who had never even written about UFOs.

There are Antonio Pardos everywhere…

Among other famous alleged UFO artifacts is a huge slab of metal found in Canada in the 1950s, probably a chunk of a dismantled bridge, and a number of small metal spheres that have been found all over the world. More of these spheres were found in New Zealand in the summer of 1972. Some are constructed of rare metals, but most are made of plain old aluminum. Dr. Condon came up with an explanation for these, too. He says they are dropped from airplanes to "calibrate radar." Since even a hollow metal sphere will drop at a speed of about 90 to 120 miles an hour, and since radar sets take several seconds to make one complete 360-degree "sweep," we can question the usefulness of such objects. Besides, there are laws against dropping such objects over populated areas. An aluminum sphere falling at 90 miles an hour could easily kill someone. And why do they keep falling in areas where there are no radar stations?

Certain facts are now inescapable. There is conclusive proof that three earthly substances (aluminum, magnesium, and silicon) play some enigmatic but important role in the UFO phenomenon. Either the objects are actually made from these materials, or their source has some way of obtaining them from earthly manufacturers. One could argue, of course, that the same metals and chemicals found on Earth might be found on another planet supporting life. But aluminum is manufactured by an electrical process, from materials that are quite rare on this planet. Cryolite, a vital ore used in the process, is found only in Greenland.

It may be that UFOs simply collect these things from dumps in some part of the world and then fiendishly drop them in another part, thus amusing themselves and confounding us.

The most important aspect of all this may be the mysterious men who plague UFO research, harass investigators, and pull off these elaborate and sometimes costly hoaxes.

Although UFOs have been around for a very long time, comparatively few people take a really deep interest in them. It has been quite easy to manipulate those few into believing almost anything. Whoever or whatever is behind the phenomenon seems to want the UFO enthusiasts to believe in visitors from Ummo and Venus. They engineer all kinds of events and false evidence to reinforce that belief. So long as a handful of star-struck amateur ufologists keep wishfully peering through telescopes looking for evidence of a superior technology on some far-off planet, the earthbound UFOs and their occupants are safe.

The extraterrestrial belief has another value. It is utterly ridiculous and unacceptable to science, and to a large part of the public. So when UFO enthusiasts appear on radio and television advocating their belief in spacemen, they succeed not only in making fools of themselves, but they also heap more ridicule on a subject already discredited by the Air Force, Dr. Condon, and a large segment of the press. They make it easier to laugh off the whole thing and ignore the empirical evidence. The UFO phenomenon has created the perfect cover by exploiting and misleading the believers.

Millions of people on every continent have now seen these fantastic flying spheres, discoids, and cigar-shaped things, yet the psychological warfare

tactics employed by the phenomenon have been so effective that only a few hardy scientists and a scattering of housewives and teenagers pay any attention. If flying saucers really are invaders from outer space, then we have already lost.

On the other hand, if something else is involved, then the UFO problem doesn't belong in the hands of the Air Force, but falls into the shady province of the National Security Agency (NSA). The CIA is merely one branch of our intelligence establishment. The NSA is a monolithic organization with an annual budget nearly three times that of the space program during its peak years. Unlike NASA, the NSA produces no visible hardware or results. Congress has virtually no control over its activities or spending.

There were Men in Black incidents in 1947 before the CIA or NSA were really functioning. The original Central Intelligence Group (CIG), forerunner of the CIA, was staffed with naval intelligence personnel. But Gen. Hoyt Vandenberg of the Air Force was one of the first directors of the CIG. Later, when he was Air Force Chief of Staff, it was Vandenberg who ordered Air Force intelligence to reverse their position. The Air Technical Intelligence Command (ATIC) had submitted a "Top Secret Estimate of the Situation" to Vandenberg, outlining their reasons for believing UFOs were from outer space. After Vandenberg threw the estimate back at them, they came up with the Project Grudge Report, which explained flying saucers away as meteors and mistakes.

The National Security Agency is headed by mathematicians, physicists, and radar experts. Yet the officially stated function of the NSA is to create codes, and to break enemy codes! It is just possible that all that money is being spent on something more than code machines.

Did General Vandenberg know something the men at ATIC did not even suspect? Are we waging a secret worldwide war with the characters who created the planet Ummo and all the other eccentric beliefs of ufology?

While Dr. Condon's findings can be seriously questioned on several levels, and have been questioned by men like Dr. James McDonald and Dr. J. Allen Hynek, his conclusion seems impossible to discredit. There is no evidence to support the notion of extraterrestrial visitations. There is, however, a mountain of evidence indicating that the force behind the UFO phenomenon is solidly

based on this planet. And it has been conning us for years, in order to keep us from discovering that fact.

CHAPTER 7

THE MOTHMAN MONSTER – SAGA MAGAZINE, OCT. 1968

What is battleship gray, five to seven feet tall, has a pair of red eyes two inches in diameter (which blaze like two laser beams), wings that extend to 10 feet when spread, and loves to chase automobiles? Give up? If it is any consolation, nobody else seems to know what it is, either. But over 100 people in Ohio and West Virginia swear they have seen such a creature since November 1966. Included among the witnesses are schoolteachers, businessmen, pilots, and members of the National Guard. They call it "The Bird," but newspapers from coast to coast have dubbed it "Mothman."

I have visited Mothman country five times since Dec. 1966, and have interviewed many of the witnesses in depth. While I have seen quite a few of the strange lights that bob at treetop level almost nightly throughout the area, Mothman has chosen to elude me. But he, or it, has reportedly turned up twice in my immediate vicinity. And those weird lights seem to have followed me from one end of West Virginia to the other.

West Virginia is a long-established haven for assorted monsters. In Sept. 1952 (a very good year for UFO stories), six glowing objects hurtled across the secluded hills of West Virginia. One of them reportedly smashed into a hilltop at a little hamlet called Flatwoods, in Braxton County. A group of residents headed by Mrs. Kathleen May and Eugene Lemon grabbed flashlights and climbed the hill to investigate. On the summit, they came face to face with a strange specter. It was an enormous gray-green figure with no visible arms or legs, but it did have a head (or helmet) shaped like the ace of spades. Two intense, pale blue beams of light represented its eyes, and it was surrounded by a very unpleasant odor. Lemon passed out on the spot, and the others decided not to linger. They grabbed up their fallen comrade and hurried back down the hill. All were violently ill, apparently from the unknown but toxic gas, for several hours. A dog that accompanied the group ran around the apparition, then staggered down the hill, vomited, and died on the spot. This became a "classic" in the annals of ufology, and is known as "The Flatwoods Monster" case.

The next West Virginian monster was allegedly a giant creature in the shape of a man, covered with black hair. It leaped in front of a bakery truck driven by Charles Stover, 25, on the edge of the Braxton County line in December of 1960. Others also reported seeing this same "Braxton County Monster," and an armed posse searched the area in vain. It left behind giant, humanlike footprints that led nowhere. Another witness, one Hannibal Harper, said it was over six feet tall, covered with glossy black hair, and walked with a slow, awkward shuffle.

Hairy monsters have become rather routine in recent years, with sightings being reported annually in California, Michigan, Washington and, most recently, even in Florida and New York State. But giant birds are another matter altogether.

"A winged human being" was seen and reported to The New York Sun back in September of 1877. They claimed it was cavorting in the skies over Brooklyn, NY.

Nebraska was reportedly visited next, in 1922, when two different witnesses in different locales described essentially the same thing. One, a hunter named William C. Lamb, said he observed the landing of a strange circular flying craft, and hid behind a tree. A giant 8-foot tall creature with wings disembarked, and flew off. (There were thousands of UFO sightings throughout the world in 1922, although the newspapers of the period usually referred to them as "mystery aircraft" and "ghost ships.")

At 2:30 a.m. on a hot morning in June 1953, Mrs. Hilda Walker, 23, Howard Phillips, 33, and Judy Meyers, 14, were sitting on their porch on E. 3rd St. in Houston, TX when, as Mrs. Walker told it, "I saw a huge shadow across the lawn. I thought at first that it was a magnified reflection of a big moth caught in the nearby streetlight. Then the shadow seemed to bound upward into a pecan tree. We all looked up."

According to The Houston Chronicle, they saw a 6 to 7-ft. tall man in gray, fitted with wings like a bat. He was surrounded by a dim gray light. Judy Meyers screamed, and the light died out.

"Immediately afterwards," Mrs. Walker said, "we heard a loud 'swoosh' over the housetops across the street. It was like a white flash of a torpedo-shaped object."

Almost ten years passed before the unearthly "Bird" was reported again, back in West Virginia (in 1962, in South Charleston and Pt. Pleasant – both uninvestigated at the time).

Then, late on the evening of Nov. 21, 1963, four teenagers were walking home from a dance when they saw what they described as an oval of bright light descend from the sky and land in a thicket close to their path. "It seemed like we were being watched," John Flaxton, 17, told authorities later. "I felt cold all over. Then suddenly we saw a huge, dark figure shambling out of the bushes toward us."

The four youngsters didn't wait another second. They fled. Under close interrogation, they all told the same story. And they all agreed that the creature had wings like a bat, and no visible head. Giant footprints were found in the area later. They were an inch deep, two feet long, and nine inches across.

That incident occurred near Sandling Park, Hythe, Kent, in England.

It's a long ways from Kent, England, to Scott, Mississippi, a little town of 300 just north of Greenville. But at 2 p.m. on Sept. 1, 1966, Mrs. James Ikart of Scott phoned the Delta Democrat Times in Greenville and reported "a man with wings" was circling over the town. Photographers and reporters rushed to the scene, but the odd aerial object was gone. There were, however, a number of people who admitted having seen it.

"It got down pretty low, and then would go up," Mrs. Ikart said. "I had never seen anything like it."

A local meteorologist, John Hursh, suggested that it was just "somebody's research balloon that got away."

A few weeks later that "research balloon" turned up hundreds of miles northeast of Scott, Mississippi. This time the "balloon" landed within short driving distance from monster-ridden Braxton County in West Virginia. Five gravediggers near Clendenin, WV were among the first to glimpse "The Bird." Kenneth Duncan of Blue Creek, WV, claimed that he and the others were baffled when something that "looked like a brown human being" performed an aerial reconnaissance of the grave site in broad daylight on Saturday, Nov. 12, 1966. "It was gliding through the trees and was in sight for about a minute," Duncan stated.

The real saga of Mothman did not begin until three days later, however. Around midnight on Nov. 15, 1966, two young married couples, Mr. and Mrs. Roger Scarberry and Mr. and Mrs. Steve Mallette, were driving through an abandoned WWII ammunition dump known as the TNT Area, seven miles outside of Pt. Pleasant, WV, when they unwittingly entered the Twilight Zone. As they passed an old deserted power plant, they saw a weird figure standing beside the road staring at them.

"It was shaped like a man, but bigger," Roger Scarberry told me. "Maybe six-and-a-half or seven feet tall. And it had big wings folded against its back."

"But it was those eyes that got us," Mrs. Scarberry declared with a shudder. "It had two big, red eyes, like automobile tail-light reflectors."

"For a minute we could only stare at it," Roger said. "Then it just turned and sort of shuffled toward the open door of the old power plant. We didn't wait around."

Roger, a strapping but soft-spoken and introspective 19-yr. old, stepped on the gas pedal of his souped-up jalopy and headed out of the TNT Area for Rt. 62, which leads into Pt. Pleasant. As they shot down the highway, his wife cried out, "It's following us!"

"We were doing better than 100 miles per hour," Roger said.

All four swore that "The Bird" was low overhead, its wings spread out to about 10 feet. It seemed to keep up with the car effortlessly, even though its wings weren't flapping.

"I could hear it making a sound," Mrs. Mallette declared. "It squeaked, like a big mouse."

"It followed us right up to the city limits," Roger said. "Funny thing, we noticed a dead dog by the side of the road there. When we came back a few minutes later, the dog was gone."

They drove directly to the office of the Mason County sheriff and excitedly poured out their story to Deputy Millard Halstead.

"I've known them all their lives," Halstead told me later. "They've never been in any trouble. I took them seriously. They saw something. They were really scared."

Deputy Halstead returned to the TNT Area with the excited quartet. As he parked outside the abandoned power plant, the police radio in his car suddenly emitted a strange sound like a speeded up phonograph record. He shut the radio off. "The Bird," however, was nowhere to be found.

The next day, a press conference was held in the County Courthouse and the four young people repeated their story. One of the reporters there, Mrs. Mary Hyre, Pt. Pleasant correspondent for the Athens, OH Messenger and a local stringer for the Associated Press, later told me, "I've heard them repeat their story a hundred times now to reporters from all over, and none of them have ever changed it or added a word."

News of the Scarberry-Mallette sighting was flashed around the world. It even appeared in the Pacific edition of Stars and Stripes. Television camera crews from Huntington and Charleston invaded Pt. Pleasant. That night, the normally deserted TNT Area resembled Times Square on New Year's Eve. Thousands of people from Ohio and West Virginia descended in hopes of getting a glimpse of the new sensation, even though Steve Mallette had announced, "I've seen it once. I hope I never see it again."

The TNT Area was to become the "home ground" of the Bird in the months ahead, and it couldn't have picked a better base. The area consists of several hundred acres of woods and open fields filled with large concrete domes known as "igloos." During World War II, these igloos were used to store the high explosives manufactured in nearby plants. A network of tunnels laced throughout the area, but most of these are now sealed off and are filled with water. Immediately adjoining the area is the McClintic Wildlife Station, a 2,500-acre animal preserve and bird sanctuary. Both places are filled with artificial ponds and dense woodlands. Steep, heavily forested, almost inaccessible hills rise in the background. The entire area is thrown open to hunters and fishermen every year, and nearly every male in the county knows every inch of the place. Its winding, poorly kept roads are also popular as "lover's lanes."

Only a few homes are scattered throughout the sector. One of these is the residence of the Ralph Thomas family. Their little house stands on a slight rise surrounded by woods and "igloos." It was here that the next act of the Mothman drama was enacted. At 9 p.m. on Wednesday, Nov. 16, 1966, Mr. and Mrs. Raymond Wamsley and Mrs. Marcella Bennett and her daughter, Tina,

drove out to visit with the Thomases.

“On the way to the house, we were watching a big, funny red light in the sky,” Mrs. Bennett told me sometime later. “It seemed to be moving around over the TNT Area. It wasn’t an airplane, but we couldn’t figure out what it was.”

Like everyone else, they had heard of the “monster” sighting of the night before, and Raymond Wamsley decided he would play a prank on the Thomases by tapping surreptitiously on their window. However, he never had the chance to play the joke.

They parked in front of the Thomas home and Mrs. Bennett climbed out of the car, gathering up her sleepy 2-yr. old, Tina, in her arms. Suddenly, a figure stirred behind the parked car.

“It seemed as if it had been laying down,” Mrs. Bennett said. “It rose up slowly from the ground. A big gray thing... Bigger than a man, with terrible, glowing red eyes.”

Mrs. Bennett was so horrified that she dropped Tina to the ground, stumbled, and fell. She remained on the ground for a long moment, transfixed.

“It was if the thing had her in some kind of trance,” Raymond Wamsley said. “She couldn’t move.”

Panic engulfed the group. The Wamsleys ran for the house as Mrs.Bennett pulled herself together, grabbed up her bruised child, and followed. They locked themselves in. Ralph and Virginia Thomas were not home, but three of their children, Rickie, Connie, and Vickie, were. Hysteria swept over them as the strange creature shuffled onto the porch and peered into the windows. Raymond Wamsley grabbed the phone and called the police. But by the time help arrived, the thing had disappeared once more.

Mrs. Bennett would not fully recover fully from this horrifying experience for many weeks. Months passed before she was able to discuss what she had seen with anyone, even her own family. Her trauma was so real that she had to start seeing a doctor on a weekly basis.

Now Mothman started to cut crazy capers all over West Virginia. Sightings were reported in Mason, Lincoln, Logan, Kanawha, and Nicholas Counties. Most of the population remained skeptical, but the near-hysteria of the rapidly

multiplying witnesses was very real. Police in the city of Charleston, WV received an excited phone call from one Richard West at 10:15 p.m., Monday, Nov. 21st. Patrolman D.L. Tucker handled the call. West insisted that a "Batman" was sitting on a roof next to his home. "It looks just like a man. It's about 6 feet tall, and has a wingspread of 6 or 8 feet. It has great big red eyes."

"Did it fly? Tucker asked.

"Straight up, just like a helicopter," West replied.

In St. Albans, WV, just outside of Charleston, Mrs. Ruth Foster claimed Mothman appeared on her front lawn on the evening of November 26th.

"It was standing on the lawn beside the porch," she told reporters. "It was tall with big red eyes that popped out of its face. My husband is six-feet-one and the bird looked about the same height or a little shorter, maybe. It had a funny little face. I didn't see any beak. All I saw were those red, poppy eyes. I screamed and ran back into the house. My brother-in-law went out to look, but it was gone."

Sheila Cain, 13, and her younger sister were walking home from the store in St. Albans on the following evening, when they saw an enormous "something" standing next to a local junkyard.

"It was gray and white with big red eyes," Sheila said, "and it must have been seven feet tall – taller than a man. I screamed, and we ran home."

The creature is supposed to have taken wing and flown low over the running girls.

By this time, the Bird's peculiar characteristics were becoming apparent. Whatever it was, most witnesses described it as man-sized or bigger, yet all agreed that it had a wingspan of only 8-10 feet. Such a wingspread would have been inadequate for such a large creature. If you were to attach wings to a normal-sized man so he could glide, you would have to make the wings at least 35 feet long. Like the bumblebee, Mothman's flight seemed scientifically impossible. In addition, most large birds require a running start and a lot of wing flapping before they can become airborne. But all of the Mothman witnesses swore that he, or it, took off straight up and flew without flapping the wings at all. Only a few birds in the hawk and eagle families can exceed 40 to 50 miles per hour in level flight, yet Mothman repeatedly demonstrated an

ability to pursue speeding autos effortlessly and swiftly.

On November 17th, Steve Farrell, 17, claimed that a "giant gray bird" chased his automobile on Rt. 7, near Cheshire, OH, just across the river from the TNT Area. And a Clarksburg, WV shoe salesman, Thomas Ury, 25, reported a hair-raising encounter on Rt. 62, a mile or so north of the TNT Area. He was driving past the Homer Smith farm at 7:15 a.m. on Nov. 25th, Ury testified, when he sighted a large flying figure...

"It veered over my convertible and began going in circles, three telephone poles high," the frightened young man later told Sheriff George Johnson. "It kept flying right over my car, even though I was doing about 75 mph."

"I've never seen anything like it," he confided to reporter Mary Hyre. "I was so scared I just couldn't go to work that day. This thing had a wingspan every bit of 10 feet. It could just be a large bird, but I certainly have never seen one like it."

Miss Connie Carpenter, a shy, studious girl of 18 from New Haven, WV, allegedly had an identical encounter at 10:30 a.m., Sunday, Nov. 27th. She was driving home from church, she told me, when she saw what she thought at first was a large man in gray, standing on the deserted links of the Mason County Golf Course outside of Mason, WV, on Rt. 33. Those 10-foot wings suddenly unfolded, and the thing took off, straight up, and headed for her car.

"Those eyes! They were a fiery red and, once they were fixed on me, I couldn't take my eyes off them," she declared. "It's a wonder I didn't have a wreck."

She said the creature flew directly at her windshield, then veered off and disappeared. Connie stepped on the gas and raced home. She was so upset that she was unable to go to school for several days after her experience, and she required medical attention.

She was also one of the few to claim a close look at the Mothman's face. "It was horrible – like something out of a science-fiction movie."

The next morning, her eyes were reddened and swollen shut, and itched fiercely. This condition persisted for over two weeks. In fact, her eyes were still red and watery when I first interviewed her. I had seen this odd ailment several times before, but only on UFO witnesses who claimed to have gotten a close look at the luminous objects. Connie Carpenter was the only Mothman

witness to come down with “eye burn.”

I myself suffered from this phenomenon when, at 1:30 a.m. on April 3rd, 1967, an eerie circle of green and red light swooped down to within 60 feet of my car on a hilltop outside of Gallipolis Ferry, WV. My eyes were swollen and itchy for about five days afterwards. The next day, I returned to the site with Sheriff George Johnson and Deputy Millard Halstead. We scoured the area with a Geiger counter with negative results. One odd thing did happen, however. As Sheriff Johnson’s car neared the spot, his police radio suddenly sprang to life with strange sounds, like a speeded up phonograph record. The startling thing was that his police radio had to be turned on and off with a key; the radio was not only turned off at the time, but the key wasn’t even in it!

The first wave of Mothman sightings in the TNT Area created a crisis for Sheriff Johnson and his small force. Thousands of people, many of them armed with rifles and revolvers, poured into the area nightly, hoping to see the monster and maybe get a shot at it. Swarms of teenagers clambered around the stripped-down old power plant with its many high, dangerous catwalks, and crumbling staircases. The gate leading to the plant was closed, and the place was ruled off-limits. For a time, Johnson and his men banned firearms in the area, fearing that the men might start shooting each other.

Somehow, Mothman always seemed to turn up where he was not wanted. Clandestine lovers, necking in parked cars on the isolated, unlit backroads of the TNT Area reported that the giant gray thing with glowing red eyes lumbered up to their autos. In November 1967, I cruised around the area for the last time and noted that there was not a single car parked anywhere. The local lovers seem to have abandoned the place.

Shortly after the first Mothman stories hit the local papers, a wide variety of explanations were expressed by assorted experts. Dr. Robert Smith of the West Virginia University biology department declared that everyone was obviously seeing a rare Sandhill crane, a bird whose long neck and long legs give it a height of six feet (and it has red patches around the eyes). Yet no hunter in the area has ever reported seeing such a crane. Members of the zoology department at nearby Ohio University pointed out that the crane inhabits the plains of Canada, and had never been seen in the West Virginia-Ohio region.

For a time, I carried a photo of a Sandhill crane in my briefcase, and showed it

to Mothman witnesses. “That’s not the thing we saw,” Roger Scarberry scoffed. “This crane could never chase us like [Mothman] did.”

“I just wish Dr. Smith could see the thing,” Mary Mallette added.

All those who reported having seen Mothman sneered at the crane theory, but the skeptics quickly accepted it and dismissed the mystery. Three groups of witnesses contributed to the confusion by declaring that they were absolutely convinced the “Bird” was really some kind of giant ornithological oddity and not a “monster from outer space,” as some were beginning to imply.

Capt. Paul Yoder and Benjamin Enochs, both volunteer firemen from Pt. Pleasant, revealed that they had seen a very large bird in the TNT Area on Nov. 18, 1966. “It was definitely a bird,” they stated flatly, “with big red eyes. But it was huge. We’d never seen anything like it.”

Seventy miles north of Pt. Pleasant, as the “Bird” flies, four people outside of Lowell, OH, spent a fascinating Saturday afternoon watching a group of gigantic birds flutter about the trees near Cat’s Creek. They saw no red eyes, witness Marvin Shock offered, but they did see four very strange winged creatures, and kept them in view for two hours on Nov. 26, 1966. Shock, who was accompanied by his two children, Marlene, 14, and Phillip, 11, first noticed the birds in some tree branches.

“They looked about as big as a man would look moving around in the trees,” Shock said later. “When we started walking toward them for a closer look – we were about 100 yards from them – they took off and flew up the ridge.”

The trio followed the birds by car and saw them settle on the edge of the woods about 200 yards from the home of Ewing Tilton. Tilton joined them. Both men agreed that the birds stood from four to five feet tall and had a wingspread of at least 10 feet.

“They had dark brown backs with some light flecks,” Tilton observed. “Their breasts were gray and they had five or six-inch bills that were straight – not curved like those of hawks or vultures.”

Shock thought there was “a reddish cast” to their heads. The birds kept their distance and finally fluttered off into limbo.

At the Gallipolis, OH airport, just across the river from Pt. Pleasant, five local

pilots got an unexpected look at the bird at 3 p.m. on Sunday, Dec. 4, 1966. When they first saw it, they mistook it for an airplane.

“Look at that crazy character coming in downwind in that plane,” Eddie Adkins commented.

Everett Wedge of Pt. Pleasant, Henry Upton of Leon, WV, and Leo Edwards, Ernie Thompson, and Adkins, all of Gallipolis, stared at the winged form gliding low over the river. It was about 300 feet up, they all agreed, and it was traveling about 70 miles an hour effortlessly, without flapping its wide wings.

As it sailed past the airport, the men noted that it seemed to have an unusually long neck and was turning its head from side to side, as if it were taking in the scenery.

“It was like something prehistoric,” one of them remarked later. “I don’t think it was a crane.”

Wedge grabbed his camera, jumped into his plane, and took off after it. But it had disappeared somewhere downriver. This was the only sighting in which a neck was observed at all.

A month later, another witness thought she was seeing an airplane, too, when she first noticed a large, winged thing majestically swooping along RT. 62 at 5 p.m. on Jan. 11, 1967. Mrs. Mabel McDaniel, the mother of Linda Scarberry, one of the original Mothman witnesses, was near Tiny’s Drive-In Restaurant on the outskirts of Pt. Pleasant when she first saw the “Bird.”

“I thought it was an airplane, then I realized it was flying much too low,” she told me later. “It was brown and had a wingspread of at least 10 feet.” Then she added an interesting detail. “I thought I could see two legs – like a man’s legs – hanging down from it. It circled over Tiny’s and then flew off.” She did not see any head or neck. The wings were not moving and there was no sound.

Now over 100 people in the Ohio Valley swear that they have seen this mysterious flying creature. Point Pleasant is part of the highly industrialized Ohio Valley, and is on the edge of the Bible Belt. Its 6,000 inhabitants support 22 churches. There are no bars. Most of the witnesses I talked to were very devout, well-educated, and owned late model cars and color TV sets. They all seemed remarkably honest and sincere, and many requested anonymity. They said they came forward with their stories only because they “wanted to help.”

They wanted to assure me that "all those other people saw what they said they saw."

Beginning in the fall of 1966, the TV sets and telephones in the region began to go wild as strange globs of crystalline white light appeared in the night skies. Many of these lights moved at treetop level. There were also many daylight sightings of strange, circular metal objects, particularly in the TNT Area. By the end of 1967, over 1,000 UFO sightings by responsible witnesses had been recorded throughout the valley. As with the Mothman sightings, I often had to "dig out" the witnesses, for many feared publicity and the attending ridicule. For each UFO report that appeared in the Athens Messenger and the Point Pleasant Register, hundreds went unpublished.

"I'm just getting too many reports," Mrs. Hyre explained. "We can't print them all."

Cars passing along the Camp Conley Road, south of the TNT Area, stalled inexplicably. TV sets and radios, some brand new, burned out suddenly, without cause. In March and April of 1967, the UFO sightings hit an incredible peak, with the objects appearing nightly at low level over the TNT Area – as if they were following a regular flight schedule. Thousands of people invaded the area again to view this new wonder. No one was disappointed. Sheriff Johnson and most of his men were among the witnesses, but soberly refused to comment publicly on the phenomenon.

As the UFO activity seemed to increase, the Mothman reports dwindled off. An Ohio man claimed that a "huge winged something" pursued his car up Rt. 33 on a rainy night in March 1967, and two women swore they saw Mothman fly up to meet a UFO on May 19, 1967.

"We were driving past the TNT Area on Rt. 62 around 10:30 p.m." one of the ladies told me, "when we saw two bright red lights on a shadowy form high in a tree just off the road. Suddenly, this big red light appeared and approached the tree, and the form rose up toward it, and disappeared. Then the big light took off to the north."

That same night, twenty persons reported seeing a brilliantly lighted object land briefly in a field next to the junior high school in Pt. Pleasant. Sightings and landings around schools have become common in the past year. They have been reported in Miami, Boston, Lima (Peru), Melbourne (Australia), and

many other places.

In November 1967, four hunters told Mrs. Hyre that they had encountered Mothman in the Chief Cornstalk Wildlife Area south of Pt. Pleasant. They said they were so startled when the huge, gray thing with red eyes loomed up in front of them that it never occurred to them to try to use the rifles they were carrying.

Shortly after noon on Nov. 2, 1967, Mrs. Ralph Thomas says she heard a sound "like a squeaky fan belt" outside her home in the TNT Area. She stepped onto her porch and saw what she described as "a tall gray figure, bigger than a man" moving swiftly among the nearby "igloos." It didn't appear to be walking, she said, rather it was sliding or gliding along the ground. She was positive that it was not a man or a bear. Since it was the hunting season, no man in his right mind would wear gray there, she noted, but would wear a red or orange hunting jacket.

The UFO-Monster situation in West Virginia and Ohio is obviously a most complicated one. It may be only a coincidence that the region was "invaded" simultaneously by giant, unidentified birds and unidentified flying objects. No photograph of the "Bird" was ever taken. No single theory seems to fit all of the reported sightings. If a huge winged creature is hiding in the TNT Area, thousands of eager hunters have failed to flush it out. Perhaps, like the "Flatwoods Monster" of 13 years earlier, it will eventually become part of West Virginia folklore and legend.

"I laughed at those people who said they'd seen Mothman," John love of Pt. Pleasant remarked to me soberly. Then on the morning of Nov. 19, 1966, he and four others came face-to-face with the thing in the TNT Area. "I'm not laughing anymore. We all got the shock of our lives. I never want to see that "Bird" again!"

But the winged thing with glowing eyes will probably reappear in the months and years ahead. What it is, where it comes from, where it goes, and why it crops up periodically to chase cars and frighten lovers may always remain a mystery. Perhaps several different things were on the loose in West Virginia in 1966 and 1967. Perhaps the great brown birds were not even distant kin of the gray giants with luminous eyes. Or perhaps they all slipped through that mysterious door that seals our world off from a world of dragons and elves

and things that go bump in the night – a world spun of myth and fantasy and legends going back as far as man's memory can take him.

From time to time, that door seems to swing open, and monsters and ghouls stalk across the landscape, bringing derision to those unfortunates who glimpse them. Then, as the posses sally forth with pitchforks and guns, the creatures slip back across the dark borderline, and the door swings shut behind them.

The sincere testimony of scores of badly frightened people seems to shift the burden of proof onto the shoulders of the baffled scientists, who typically ignore things that they cannot carry into laboratories for study beneath their microscopes. The mystery is not that such creatures live; it is that we have been able to overlook them for so long.

CHAPTER 8

NEVER MIND THE SAUCER! DID YOU SEE THE GUYS WHO WERE DRIVING IT? - TRUE MAGAZINE, FEB. 1967

"I would know him if I saw him in Oklahoma City tomorrow. He saw me. He'd know me, too." William "Eddie" Laxton, a 56-year old electronics engineer from Temple, OK, was discussing a man he had briefly encountered in the predawn hours of March 23, 1966. He was an ordinary-looking man who might easily go unnoticed in a crowded bar, according to Eddie. But Eddie didn't meet him in a bar. He saw him getting into a strange, brilliantly illuminated, cigar-shaped flying contraption that rested on four legs in the middle of a highway – a craft similar to many described by other witnesses all over the world. Usually they are termed "unidentified flying objects" or UFOs.

At about 5:30 a.m. that bleak March day, Laxton was driving along a deserted stretch of Highway 70, near the Texas-Oklahoma border. He was on his way to work at Sheppard Air Force Base near Wichita Falls, TX (where he teaches electronics), when a huge fish-shaped object suddenly loomed in front of him. According to the story he later told to newsman Paul Harvey and UFO investigator Hayden Hewes, he jammed on his brakes and pulled to a stop about 50 yards from where the object was blocking the road at a 45-degree angle. The thing was, he estimated, about 75 feet long.

"There were four very brilliant lights on my side," he said. "Bright enough so that a man could read a newspaper by the light a mile away." He also observed that it seemed to be lit up inside and that it "had a plastic bubble in front that was about three feet in diameter, and you could see through it." It had a tail structure with horizontal stabilizers about two and a half feet long. Friends and associates say Laxton has always been blessed with a phenomenal memory, and they believe him when he says he was able to distinguish a group of numbers painted vertically in black on the side of the fuselage. He remembers them as reading TL4768 (or TL4168).

Halfway along the fuselage, there was a porthole about two feet in diameter. It was divided into four equal sections and there was a small door below it, measuring about four and a half feet high and two and a half feet wide. This

door was open and white light was pouring from it. Directly outside the object, a human-looking man was examining the underside of the craft with some kind of flashlight. As Laxton climbed out of his car, this creature turned, climbed up a metal ladder and entered the door. "I'm sure it was aluminum," Laxton said later.

He described the mysterious "pilot" as weighing about 180 pounds and being five feet nine inches tall (like many airline pilots), with a light complexion. He was wearing what looked like a mechanic's cap with the bill turned up. "I got the impression he was about 30 to 35 years old," Laxton said. "He wore either coveralls or a two-piece suit that looked like green-colored fatigues. I got the idea that he had three stripes about and three below, on his sleeve. The above stripes were in a wide 'V' shape."

A few seconds after the door closed, Laxton says, "The craft started up. It sounded like a high-speed drill. It lifted off the ground about 50 feet high and headed toward the Red River. In about five seconds, it was a mile away." When the machine took off, Laxton reported, "The hair on the back of my hands and neck stood up."

Admittedly excited by what he had seen, Laxton got back into his car and drove about a mile, when he came upon a huge tank truck parked beside the road. The driver, C.W. Anderson of Snyder, OK, said that he had seen something following him in his mirror and that he had also watched it fly away toward Red River. After the two men's stories appeared in local papers, other truck drivers came forward with reports of having seen similar objects along Highway 70 earlier in the year.

Laxton was later interviewed by scientists from Northwestern University, the Institute of Atmospheric Physics, and the U.S. Air Force.

"I was interviewed by 25 or 30 persons," Laxton says. "There were generals, captains, sergeants, secretaries, and stenographers. They had me make drawings of the object and tell everything I knew about it. It was all one-sided. They asked, I answered."

Soon after he had filed his initial report, a group of Army vehicles picked him up at his office. "A colonel, his driver and a detail of men drove me to the landing area," Laxton reports. "We were there about 30 or 35 minutes. While I answered more questions, the men searched the area. I got the impression they

knew what they were doing."

"We'll put down that you saw a helicopter," he says one of the officers finally told him.

Laxton's report of a human-type UFO pilot in coveralls did not come as any great shock to followers of UFO news. In recent years, there have been many UFO reports involving human-type and human-sized pilots.

These unidentified tourists seem to have a limited wardrobe. They wear either coveralls or some type of space suit, topped off with visored helmet or transparent "goldfish bowls." In a few instances, as when one of them appeared near Adelaide, Australia on Oct. 28, 1962, they have been seen wearing a "gas mask" type of headgear. In that case, the witness, a high-school teacher named Mrs. Ellen D. Sylvester, told of seeing an illuminated oval object resting on three legs near a highway. Mrs. Sylvester said she saw a six-foot tall being "in some kind of uniform" with its face covered by "a form of breathing apparatus." It was apparently inspecting the tripod landing gear of the craft. She watched as it got back into the machine and took off in a northerly direction.

On one occasion at least, it appears that a UFO pilot may have been photographed. On July 31, 1952, a 30-yr. old Italian engineer, Gianpietro Monguzzi, and his wife were mountain climbing in northern Italy. They were struggling up the Cherchen Glacier in the Bernina Mountains.

"It was about 9:30 a.m.," Monguzzi explained shortly after the incident, "when we saw this circular machine, with a transparent dome on top, swoop low and land 75 or 100 feet away from where we were standing. I wanted to move closer to it, but my wife became frightened and begged me to stay with her."

Lying in the snow, Monguzzi says he unlimbered the camera he was carrying, a Kodak Retina I. It was loaded with fast black-and-white film and was equipped with a Schneider lens. After snapping a picture of the object, he and his wife were astonished to see a normal-sized being walk around from behind it and inspect its underside with a long flashlight with a glowing sphere on the end of it. This being was dressed in a space suit, wearing a helmet, a pack of some sort on its back and heavy, possibly weighted shoes.

Monguzzi excitedly snapped away, he reports, taking a series of pictures as the

creature stiffly walked around the craft and bent over to look under it. An antenna had unreeled above the object after it landed, and it looked as if the space-suited being was also wearing an antenna. The two witnesses could not see any form of landing gear. The object had settled directly onto the snow, its convex body leaving a circle on the spot. After completing its inspection, the creature disappeared behind the thing again, and it lifted noiselessly into the air and flew away. Monguzzi even took a picture of its departure.

He was certain that he had taken the most astounding pictures of the century. And perhaps he had. But when they were developed, they looked too good to be true. A Hollywood special effects studio could not have done a better job with the latest in tabletop photography techniques. The lighting was perfect; too perfect. The bright mountain sun bouncing off the shimmering snow and ice produced a high contrast. The object was clear and distinct, and the creature was well outlined and appeared as a human-sized being might appear at that distance (75 feet) under those circumstances. At long last, the world had "proof" that flying saucers existed and that some kind of "human" life was riding around in them. Or so he thought.

As soon as the existence of the pictures became known – and the young Italian didn't make much of an effort to keep them secret – he was inundated with reporters. He even claimed "an American secret agent" turned up at his cottage disguised as an Italian bersagliero (military ski trooper), and questioned him closely through an entire night, trying to get him to contradict his story. Later, he sold the pictures to the Italian magazine EPOCA, and was horrified when they were published with a caption identifying them as clever fakes. The conservative Italian Edison Society, of which he was a member, was also horrified. They booted him out unceremoniously. Regrettably, the director of the Society was also Monguzzi's boss at the Monza industrial plant near Milan. He fired the now-disgraced photographer. Today, Monguzzi prefers not to discuss the incident. "They cheated me," he told one UFO investigator. "This bad joke of the journalists made me lose my job as well as my membership in the Edison Society. I was out of work for a year and a half."

Not all of the millions of people throughout the world who have reported seeing UFOs have lost their jobs – not even the hundreds who claim to have seen "pilots" or "ufonauts."

A French student of UFOs, Aime Michel, recorded and investigated over 100

sightings of ufonauts in 1954 alone. Jacques Vallee, an astronomer at Northwestern University and author of the best-selling Anatomy of a Phenomenon, published a study in which he tabulated 80 specific sightings between 1909 and 1960. A total of 153 "beings" were observed around grounded UFOs in these sightings. Of these, 35 were described as normal-looking humans and several were seen wearing coverall-type garments similar to those reported by Eddie Laxton.

Other investigators have made similar tabulations, all of which tend to show that real or imagined contact with "space beings" is much more common than most of us realize. And it seems reasonable to believe that more cases occur than are actually reported. Many people, for obvious reasons, are reluctant to walk into their local police station or newspaper office and announce, "Hey, I just had a talk with a three-foot man who got out of a flying saucer." Many witnesses who do make reports insist that their names not be used.

Since 1947, there has been a small but very vocal group of crackpots and publicity seekers who claim to be in almost constant touch with the "Brothers From Outer Space." These people have founded mystical cults and published absurd books expounding sophomoric philosophies (supposedly passed on to them by the flying saucer operators), bringing ridicule to what is already, in the eyes of many skeptics, a pretty ridiculous subject anyway. The odious reputation of these groups makes many an apparently sincere "contactee" reluctant to step forward with his story and thus inadvertently join their ranks.

But a few courageous souls have taken the plunge. Consider the alleged experience of a prominent Brazilian lawyer, Prof. Joao de Freitas Guimaraes, a sober, middle-aged military advocate in Sao Sebastiao. He says that he went joyriding in a flying saucer on a cool evening in June of 1956. For a long time afterward, he kept his experience to himself, sharing it with only a few friends. On a dull, overcast evening, he recalls, he was walking alone along a beach on an island off the coast of Brazil, when he saw a jet of water rise up. A "potbellied" machine surfaced and moved towards shore. To his astonishment, two men, both over 5'10" with fair hair and wearing tight green coveralls, clambered out. They approached him directly and silently indicated that they would like him to step aboard. He spoke to them in French, English, Italian, and Portuguese, but they didn't seem to understand any of these languages. Since they didn't seem hostile, and since he was overcome with curiosity, he accepted their unspoken invitation, climbed up a long ladder mounted outside

the craft, and, with the help of the two men, stepped inside.

The ladder was retracted and the door eased shut. The professor remained in a small compartment next to a window. He could not say later how many compartments there were in the craft. As the machine lifted into the air, he was surprised to see water splashing against the portholes. “Is it raining?” he asked.

For the next forty minutes or so (he says his watch stopped during the flight), the flying object flitted about in the starlit upper atmosphere. During the trip, he noted that he felt pain and cold in his extremities. He tried to ask the men where they were from, but they did not answer. One of them showed him a chart, something like a Zodiac, and he had the feeling that they were trying to explain when they would return. They wanted him to meet them again. Finally, they delivered him to the spot where they had picked him up. Six months later, he told the story to a friend, Dr. Lincoln Feliciano, who contacted a Brazilian journalist. Prof. Guimaraes quickly became a celebrity of sorts in Brazil and was, he confessed, amazed by the grave respect his story was accorded.

A more recent contactee is a California TV repairman named Sidney Padrick. Padrick, who is 46 years old, was strolling along Manresa Beach, CA at 2 a.m. on the morning of Jan. 30, 1965, when he says he heard a loud humming sound and saw a strange machine land nearby. It was, he said, about 50 feet long and 30 feet high. He has refused to describe it further, claiming that an Air Force major has instructed him not to discuss the details of his experience. In early newspaper accounts of the incident, he said a voice spoke to him from the craft and invited him aboard, assuring him that he would not be harmed. He says he entered through a square door and saw nine normal-looking men inside. One of them spoke to him in English. They all wore bluish-white, tight-fitting uniforms and had dark hair. He noted that they seemed to communicate to each other silently, through gestures and facial expressions. Although he insists he spent two hours aboard the machine, Padrick has not divulged much of what he saw or was told.

A gifted linguist who once served as the British Consul in Brazil, Mr. Gordon Creighton, has been quietly compiling documentation on the many incidents in South America and the Soviet Union. He has turned up some astounding accounts. On the night of June 5, 1964, for example, a 42-yr. old doctor and his wife (they asked to remain anonymous, as many witnesses do) were driving

from Cordoba to Rio Ceballos, Argentina, when suddenly, a huge brilliantly lighted object came out of the sky and landed directly in front of them on the highway.

"I flashed my lights," the doctor said, "as a signal for the other to dip his, for the light was so powerful that it was impossible to see the road at all." But the light remained undimmed and continued to approach. The doctor pulled off the road and his engine stalled. The object came to within one yard of his car and halted there, the bright light slowly fading to violet. Now the two alarmed witnesses could see that it was an elongated, cigar-shaped object. They sat motionless in confusion for 20 minutes. There was no movement in the object as it blocked their path. Finally, the doctor tried to start his car again, but it wouldn't respond. He was carrying a revolver, so he decided to get out and investigate. But just as he was about to open the door, he saw somebody – a very human somebody – coming up to the car.

"Que le pasa, amigo?" (What's the matter, friend?") The person asked in a soft voice.

"My car won't start," the doctor answered in Portuguese, taken aback.

"Why don't you try it again?" the man directed. The doctor turned the key and this time, to his surprise, the motor caught. Then he turned on his headlights. They spilled onto a "fantastic object," a metal craft unlike anything he had ever seen before.

"Don't be frightened," the mystery man continued. "I'm a terrestrial. I have a mission to complete here on Earth." Then he walked off slowly toward two other human-looking beings, both dressed entirely in gray, who were apparently waiting for him beside the machine. All three got into it, and it took off quickly and disappeared into the night sky. The doctor and his wife reported that they began "to tremble and shake like leaves" and it was several minutes before they could pull themselves together and continue their journey.

Another, even more incredible incident, is supposed to have occurred at almost the same spot seven years earlier. The witness, a young man from Cordoba, Argentina, swears that he was taken aboard a UFO there in April of 1957. He claims that he was headed toward Rio Ceballos on his motorcycle early one morning, when his engine suddenly stalled. As he dismounted to look for the trouble, he was stunned to see a gigantic disc-shaped object some 60 feet in

diameter, hovering directly above him. In a state of terror, he leaped into a ditch and tried vainly to hide himself as the mysterious craft landed on the road nearby. A "lift device" descended from the machine, and a humanlike being appeared. The young man described this being as 5'8" tall, wearing "clothing like a diver's suit – fitting the body closely – and appearing to be made of plastic rather than cloth."

This being walked over to the ditch where the youth was cowering and gently offered his hand, helping the Cordoban up and leading him into the craft. They entered the lift and rose into the saucer. Several other ufonauts were inside the machine, he said, seated before a series of intricate-looking control panels. None of them paid any attention to their visitor. He was surprised to notice a series of large square windows above the panels, because no windows had been visible at all from the outside. After a few minutes, his silent guide gestured towards the lift and took him back to the ground. The young man mentioned hearing a sound like the hissing of escaping air. The ufonaut put his hand on the youth's shoulder in a gesture of farewell, and then returned to the craft. The witness reported that his motorcycle would not start until the strange flying machine had risen into the air.

Not all ufonaut reports concern human-type beings. Some of them are described as "little men." When police officer Lonnie Zamora reported seeing an egg-shaped UFO standing on four legs in Socorro, NM on April 24, 1964, he said that he had also seen "two children or small adults in white coveralls" walking around it. They leaped into the craft and flew off with a roar in front of his disbelieving eyes. Astronomer J. Allen Hynek, an official UFO consultant to the U.S. Air Force, investigated this case and termed it "one of the most puzzling," without ever attempting to explain it.

In 1949, two prospectors in Death Valley, CA told reporters that they had seen a flying disc crash. They claimed they had chased two tiny pilots across the sand dunes until they disappeared. When the prospectors returned to the crash site, the craft had also disappeared.

Radio announcer James Townsend of station KEYL, in Long Prairie, MN, claimed he saw three "animated tin cans," six inches high, around a rocket-shaped device in the center of Hwy. 27 on Oct. 23, 1965. Townsend says he watched the object take off with a bright glow and a loud humming sound. He led the local police to the site and they observed a large, glowing sphere in the

sky over the area.

"Little men" have perhaps gotten more publicity than any other type, but there are other varieties of ufonauts as well. One of the most common is a stiff-walking character with a "melon-shaped" head. A recent adventure with this type of being was related by Ricardo Mieres, a 17-yr. old Argentinean. Mieres insists that he encountered some kind of "robot" while motorcycling down a road outside of Parana at 8:30 p.m. on July 26, 1962. He nearly ran off of the road, he told investigators later, when he came upon a tall creature with a melon-shaped head and large round eyes that stared at him fixedly. The creature grabbed the boy's scarf and turned abruptly away in a manner Mieres described as "scarcely human." Badly frightened, the boy sped back to the city and gathered some friends. They returned to the spot in time to see a large, white light rise into the sky. The area was covered with strange footprints and deep tracks.

It would, of course, be easy to discount the excited testimony of a 17-yr. old boy but, less than a month later, a medical doctor and his wife came face-to-face with the same kind of beings in the same locale. Dr. and Mrs. J. Gazcue were driving near Parana on Aug. 21, 1962 when they observed two "strange persons" walking towards the road and making signals for him and his wife to stop. The two approached from a "halo of light" near the roadside. They were over six feet tall and had light hair and huge, widely separated eyes. The doctor ignored their signals and stepped on the gas. Local newspapers reported that Mrs. Gazcue suffered a "nervous attack" over the incident and required several days to recover.

A retired longshoreman, John F. Reeves, 66, of Brooksville, Florida, swears he met this kind of being on the afternoon of March 2, 1963. He says that he was taking a long, solitary walk, as was his habit when, about 1:30 p.m., out on the dunes a mile-and-a-half from his home, he saw a circular craft standing on four legs in the sand. Later, he described it as being about 30 feet in diameter and eight feet thick. There was a small dome on top, and the whole thing was a reddish-purple color, "like a soap bubble," glistening in the sun. Curious, he started to walk toward it when he was stunned to see a "space-suited being" step out of the bushes and turn stiffly toward him in a slow, mechanical manner. The creature was, he told reporters later, about five feet tall and appeared to be wearing a tight, grayish-silver garment with a transparent globe over its head. Its face, he noted, appeared normal, except that

the eyes were unusually large and set wide apart, and its chin seemed to come to a point. It was wearing mittens of some pliable material.

As he stood paralyzed with fear, he saw the creature reach to its side and produce a small black box, which it raised to its face. There was a blinding flash, "like lightning in the night," Reeves said. He turned and started to run, but stumbled and fell, knocking his glasses off in the process. A second flash of light went off behind him and, when he looked up, he saw the creature mounting a ladder on the craft. The ladder retracted, and the machine lifted with a high-pitched whine, shooting off at high speed. Holes were found in the sand where the object's legs had supposedly stood, and there were several odd dumbbell-shaped footprints in the area. Reeves also found two pieces of thin paper, "like Kleenex" containing some strange hieroglyphics, which he turned over to Air Force investigators. The Air Force later classified the incident as a hoax, even though Reeves was given a series of lie-detector tests and passed them all.

Many other witnesses have reported the robotlike beings with melon-shaped heads and large, widely spaced eyes. On Aug. 3, 1966, at 5:30 in the morning, a 50-yr. old woman in Erie, PA was awakened by the sound of barking dogs. She looked out of her bedroom window, she says, and saw a very strange being. It was walking up the street away from the United Oil Storage tanks on W. 3rd St. She describes it as about 5'6" tall, with very broad shoulders and a slender build. It was dressed in a bright yellow garment with no visible pockets or seams. Its head was large, "moon-shaped," and seemed to be covered with "straggly, muddy-colored hair."

"He moved," she said, "like a mechanical windup toy. The legs did not bend at the knees, and it held its arms tight against its sides." Whatever it was, it frightened her enough so that she woke up her husband, and they decided to call the police. The police just laughed. But a few days later, another woman in the same area reported seeing an identical creature. She was driving down the street in the early morning when the being stepped into her path. She stopped her car and the thing "pounded on the hood." Then it shuffled stiffly off into the darkness.

There have also been reports of small, black monsters. A luminous sphere blocked a street in Caracas, Venezuela early on the morning of Nov. 28, 1954, forcing two truck drivers to stop. When they got out of their cab to take a look,

they were attacked by three dwarfs covered with bristly hair. One of the drivers, Gustavo Gonzales, pulled a knife and tried to stab one of the creatures. He later reported that his knife glanced off "as if it were hitting steel." The truck drivers managed to escape. A local doctor, out on a late call, witnessed the whole episode and confirmed their story.

At 4 a.m. on the morning of Aug. 16, 1955, another truck driver, Ernest Sudard, 35, encountered a UFO on a street in Bradford, England and briefly glimpsed a small being, about four feet tall, wearing skintight black clothes with a silver disc on his chest. This one moved with a peculiar, jerky motion, holding its arms tightly against its sides.

The strangest being of all is probably the one sighted in Malvern, Arkansas, last summer. Fabar Mills, a local merchant who saw it, called it an "unidentified walking object." He described the creature as being luminous, about eight feet tall, and changing in color from red to orange to yellow.

Unfortunately, each new ufonaut sighting only adds to the mystery, a mystery that the U.S government has now assigned scientists at the Univ. of Colorado to solve. Any immediate solution, however, seems improbable. The origins and motivations of these creatures, if they are real, can only be speculated about. But millions of people throughout the world are now convinced that something is going on, and that there is "somebody out there." More and more respected scientists, too, are beginning to take the matter seriously as they delve into the question of life on other worlds.

In the spring of 1966, some 300 physicists, astronomers, and exobiologists met in California to discuss the possibility of extraterrestrial life. At that meeting, Dr. Lee A. DuBridge, president of the California Institute of Technology, said, "Sometimes I think we are alone in the universe, and sometimes I think we're not. In either case, it's a staggering thought."

CHAPTER 9

WEST VIRGINIA: A PLETHORA OF PARANORMAL - 1994 LECTURE

I made Point Pleasant, West Virginia my headquarters in 1966. I then fanned out to the rest of West Virginia investigating all these various things. It's now gotten very expensive to do these kinds of trips. It was my procedure in those days to go up to the police station first and introduce myself. because I'm a Yankee. In those days, I carried a pile of press credentials. I would introduce myself to the police so that they knew I was just another harmless nut. My second step was to go up to the local newspaper and introduce myself there. They always – large and small – wanted to interview me, and I always turned them down. I didn't want anything in the papers about me. I just wanted to know what was happening there. My third step would be to find the local historian. Every town – even a town of 500 people – has somebody who fancies themselves the local historian of the town. Sometimes it's the local doctor; most often it's the local librarian. Those are the three contacts I would make first, before I would go out and talk to witnesses and such.

I would always ask the police my usual list of peculiar questions. I still do this, and they always act astonished. One of my questions was, "Has anyone been killed by lightning here lately?" This doesn't normally happen very often. It happens only 800 times a year, worldwide. But whenever I asked this to police where they were having a lot of UFO sightings, their mouths would drop and they'd say, "My God, how'd you know? Just last week somebody got killed by a lightning bolt." It's a very unusual occurrence. In one town in Ohio, I arrived at the police station just as they were bringing in a body that had been killed by a lightning bolt. This apparent link was odd. There was something electrical going on in these towns with UFO sightings.

Thirty years ago, somebody was cruising around West Virginia and Ohio in an old automobile, harassing young ladies in their cars, trying to drive them off the road and so on. This is not uncommon today, but it was uncommon then. Witnesses described this man (probably a man in his 30s) as wearing a "frightwig." He was always driving what looked like a car that was 10 or 15 years old, but kept in very good condition. It didn't take me long to figure out

that there was some serial rapist on the loose in that area. I would approach my friends at the different police departments and say, “Hey, I’ve heard these stories. There’s a maniac on the loose here.” They would always pooh-pooh it. They’d say, “Oh no, Keel , these women are making things up,” and they would ignore these stories. I warned them that there was something out of the ordinary going on, and that there was one person in that area who should probably be arrested.

Gray Barker, who lived in West Virginia, also came across some of these stories on his own. In Braxton County, young people were disappearing in large numbers. These were mostly young men below the age of 20. They would be hitchhiking to, say, a local cinema or something, and just disappear off the face of the earth. Again, I told the police that there were too many of these disappearances – that they had a maniac on the loose. The police always assured me that I was wrong. I was an out-of-towner. What did I know?

In November of 1966, four young people in an old broken down car were driving through the local lovers’ lane – an area that was called the TNT Area. During the Second World War, there was a TNT plant there. Actually, it was more complicated than that. They were making parts for atom bombs there, but that’s a long, involved story. Anyway, there was an old building there that they called a “power plant.” It was a building that housed generators for these TNT factories. They were driving past this building and saw what looked like a very large man, 6 or 7 feet tall, standing next to this power plant. He scared the death out of them.

The boy who was driving hit the accelerator, and they drove out of there at a high speed. This thing rose up in the air and followed their car. They were going over 60 miles an hour out on the dirt road, and over 100 on the paved road. Still, this thing was flying right along with them. So they drove straight to the police station. You have to realize that in small towns, teenagers do not go to the police station voluntarily. But they were so scared that they went to the police and reported this. The police were so convinced by their behavior that they held a press conference the next day. Reporters from the local newspapers, from Charlotte and other cities around there, came to hear this very bizarre story of this flying man. The four teenagers gave a very convincing account of it, and the newspapers labeled this creature “Mothman.” That was the beginning of the Mothman “caper.” The television show Batman was popular at the time…

Some of these people had seen this creature walking around and making strange noises. But it didn't leave footprints in the snow. All of the descriptions pretty much matched, except some people said the eyes were blazing red. Most people said they couldn't see the face at all. It would be dark, and they could just see this giant figure bearing down on them. Then they'd see it fly away.

When I talked to some of the witnesses in depth, it was obvious that they had been in a trance state when they saw this creature. A banker had seen it. The banker heard a noise and went out on his front porch. He stood there for twenty minutes. His wife was inside watching television. Finally, twenty minutes later, he staggered into the house. She said he looked like he had seen a ghost. He was pale and shaking, and didn't realize twenty minutes had passed. He claimed that during those twenty minutes when he was outside, this creature was standing on his lawn, staring at him. And he couldn't move...

My Mothman book came out in 1975. That was the year that the police in West Virginia discovered a cave filled with bodies. All of the animals had been in there, and the bodies had been rotting for a long time. They couldn't tell how many bodies there were. They think there were 20 or 30 bodies in the cave. So I was right about a serial killer being on the loose there. Now it even gets stickier. The police, after a rather short investigation, dropped the whole thing…

The reason our suicide rate in the United States is so high is because they often put murders down as "suicide" in small towns, because they don't want unsolved murders on the books. Very often, they know who committed the murder, but they figure, "Well, the victim deserved getting murdered, so we'll just forget about it." It seemed like everyone in West Virginia knew who this killer was. I wouldn't dare give his name here, but he belongs to a prominent family in West Virginia. The reason that they know he did it is because he was put away for a while in a mental institution. While he was in the mental institution, all of the disappearances stopped. When he was released from the mental institution, they started up again… I don't know if those are still going on – if this fellow is still on the loose. I hope he's not. As I say, for a New Yorker to get involved in West Virginia affairs like that is a pretty sticky wicket. It was smarter of me to stay out of it.

A lot of things are still going on in West Virginia. I still get mail from a lot of people down there, some that I knew 30 years ago. One of the mysteries that I tried to untangle – and found hopeless – was that there were a number of babies born during that period who seemed to be rather unusual. After the babies were born, they were surrounded by poltergeist activity, and other odd things…

THE INFRARED TOWER – 1990 LECTURE

People are always asking me what I expect next, and sometimes the answer is "more of the same."

We had the animal mutilations in the 1960s and '70s that got a lot of attention. And they are still going on… We never did catch whoever was doing it. They would remove certain organs from these animals. Sometimes the animal, say a cow, would be tied down right next to the house where the whole farm family was sleeping. They'd wake up in the morning and their cow had been mutilated right next to the house. There was no way this could happen without the cow making noises, because cows (and horses) make a lot of noise if any unknown person starts prowling around them. If someone starts hurting them and drawing blood, there's certainly going to be a lot of racket. These people didn't hear a sound during the night.

These animal mutilations began in the 1960s. I started writing about it, and everybody said I was full of crap. They'd never heard of such a thing. Then as the years went on, it spread all across the country, almost methodically. It became huge in the 1970s. All of the UFO buffs jumped on it and said that the flying saucers were doing this to our animals. Occasionally, flying saucers would be seen in the area of these mutilations... I went up into Canada, and the Canadian Royal police wouldn't release any data on it. But we know there were a lot of mutilations up in Canada…

Now, years later, we've gotten reports from police that there were also human mutilations at the same time, which the police kept out of the papers… The police try to blame "devil cults" and so on, but there's really no indication that such a cult exists. There are some small cults that practice black magic – that take very small children and use them as sacrifices in their rites – but there are probably not more than 25 people in the whole country that are involved in that

kind of ritual magic.

I saw a lot of UFOs in the 1960s, and I tried to take pictures of them. I had some very good equipment. In most cases, what came out on the film was much different from what I saw with the naked eye. I started wondering about this. What was it about UFOs that responded differently on film? I started a lot of experimentation with photographic equipment around 1968. I had a friend who was a professional photographer. He had a big studio. We set up various kinds of metallic objects and aimed ultraviolet and infrared rays at them. We photographed them to see what would come out. What we got were photographs of rather ghostly-looking blobs. For example, I had an aluminum teakettle that we used in one experiment. We aimed ultraviolet light ("black light" as it's called) on the teakettle and photographed it. It came out looking just like many of the ghost photographs that you've seen over the years.

In 1966, LIFE magazine was going to get to the bottom of the whole UFO mystery. At that time, Henry Luce, the founder of LIFE, was a big UFO buff. He died shortly after, but he ordered LIFE to do something about it. They sent teams of professional photographers to the Croton Reservoir in New York State, where people had been reporting all kinds of UFOs. These photographers used infrared film and various kinds of filters, and they came up with some very interesting and surprising photographs. I saw the photographs. LIFE never did their special issue on UFOs, because LOOK magazine beat them to it. LOOK came out with a special issue about 3 months before LIFE, so LIFE gave up their special issue. Then Henry Luce died, and they dropped the whole thing…

Back in the 1950s, amateur radio operators started receiving voices that they couldn't explain on their HAM radio sets. These voices claimed to be from outer space. This created a whole cult. There are tape recordings that are still available, claiming to be voices from outer space… In the 1960s, I knew a HAM operator in West Virginia who had a VLF set, which is very low frequency. It takes a lot of explanation, but normal frequencies are quite high, while a VLF is below 100 on the Hertz scale. It is used mainly now by submarines, because VLF waves will travel a great distance and penetrate water. It's a convenient way of communicating with submarines. But because of the nature of VLF, you really can't transmit voices. You can only transmit dots and dashes. And yet on the VLF sets that I listened to, we were getting voices. These voices were talking in a very strange language. A very guttural

language like German or Swedish... Yet they weren't those languages. We were familiar with those languages. We couldn't identify what they were talking about, or how they were even being transmitted because, as I say, normally you can't transmit the human voice on VLF.

Now, as our technology progressed, people began to get more things on tape recorders. I'm sure you're all familiar with the voices that are picked up mysteriously on brand new tapes on tape recorders. There's a whole cult of ghost-watchers who've tried to identify the voices on these tapes. One friend of mine swore that he had a tape recording made by George Bernard Shaw, who'd been dead for about 30 years at that time. The UFO investigators had all kinds of trouble with their tape recorders. They would record something, thinking it had recorded perfectly. When they got the tape home, there would be nothing but static on the tape.

With the introduction of the personal computer, we now have a rash of cases of "haunted computers." people will have their computer unplugged. They'll get up in the morning and there'll be a message on the computer, even though it wasn't plugged in. There've been a number of these stories in the computer literature. The computer buffs are now becoming ghost buffs, trying to figure out where these strange signals on their computers are coming from.

The truth is that all electronic equipment is susceptible to this kind of mysterious interference, whether it's a computer or tape recorder or telephone. Lots of people get telephone messages from the dead. There are books on it, listing these calls. The last step was to get messages from TV. The way they did it was actually very similar to what I was doing in the 1960s. Buffs would aim ultraviolet lights at a mirror, and then turn the video camera on the mirror. When they'd play the tape back, there would be these images. The very first image was of Romy Schneider, the actress, shortly after she died. This became a big sensation in Europe. A lot of people started doing it, because anybody with a video camera can do this. You need a video camera, a mirror, and an ultraviolet light (which you can buy almost anywhere).

They're making rapid "progress." We're going to find that electronically, we can communicate with whatever this force is. It's a very mischievous force. Don't be surprised if by the end of this decade, we are all going to parties to watch tapes of dead people. [laughter]

I'm going to change the subject a little bit and get away from the dead people. Back in 1941, there was a minister in Mt. Vernon, Illinois, who was taking an evening stroll in that town. He stopped to light his pipe. There was a roar in the tree that he was standing next to. This creature jumped out of the tree, knocked his hat off, and knocked the pipe out of his mouth. He said it was like a baboon. It was a large, hairy creature. This is one of the classic stories in our Bigfoot anthologies. Many other people in that particular area also reported seeing this same kind of creature in '41 and '42.

Then in 1966, there was a man in West Virginia, whose name was Wooten. He was sitting by a small creek, fishing. He was smoking a pipe. Suddenly, out of the water of the creek came this huge, hairy monster. It smelled terrible, as hairy monsters often do. That's why they call it the Abominable Snowman (although there's a publicity campaign to change his name to "the sweet-smelling snowman" or something). Anyway this creature came out of the creek, walked up to this very startled fisherman, and knocked the pipe out of his mouth. Then stalked off… That story got into the local press.

In New Jersey in the 1970s, we had several "Bigfoot" cases. In a number of these cases, the Bigfoot would come out of the woods, walk up to the house that was there, pound on the air conditioner, and then stalk off.

People in the house would rush out, see this thing, and nearly faint. The monster would simply walk off.

In Erie, Pennsylvania, people were seeing what they thought was a robot. It was walking down the street near the waterfront. As it walked down the street, it would pound on the hoods of some of the cars. It would pick out certain cars and just pound on the hood, and then walk off.

We had a tremendous UFO wave in the 1960s and 1970s. I was collecting information on the UFOs that were chasing automobiles. Many of you have heard of the UFO "abduction" cases that we have now. In those days, we didn't call them abduction cases. We had many cases where these UFOs – these lights in the sky – were coming down very close to the cars, and chasing the cars. The question that I had was, "Why were they picking out certain cars and chasing them?" So we started collecting all the details we could… We found in a number of cases that women who were having their menstrual period were driving the cars. This is a very curious fact. We also found that they were

mainly chasing a car known as the Ford Galaxy. The UFOs were after our Ford Galaxies! Another little interesting fact is that the drivers of many of these cars were teachers. And some of them were teachers of gifted children. It seemed odd that UFOs were able to pick that out. But if you were a teacher of gifted children driving a Ford Galaxy, you were in big trouble. And if you were also having your menstrual period, you were in terrible trouble.

For the last 40 years, we've had a great many sightings around atomic plants, too. All of these disparate sightings have one thing in common, and that is infrared. The man's pipe, when he's smoking it, gets very hot and it gives off infrared rays. That's what infrared is... It's what you see from heat. The air conditioner on the side of a house gives off a lot of heat. It's surrounded by heat. And again, it's infrared. We took photographs of a number of different automobiles with infrared film and infrared filters, to see what the infrared characteristics of different cars were. For some reason, the Ford Galaxy was giving off more infrared than most of the other cars. These creatures were being attracted to the air conditioners, pipes, and cars by the infrared that was around them.

Many animals can see infrared. That's how animals are able to hunt at night. A bird flying 2000 feet in the air can't see the rabbit on the ground in the middle of the night. But the rabbit's body is giving off heat, and they can see that infrared. The bird can then come down and pluck up the rabbit, as they often do. So Bigfoot and the UFOs, for some reason, are attracted to infrared. Maybe they can't see the object itself, only the infrared around it.

We've known this for many years, but it's very difficult to get people to experiment with this. First of all, the average UFO buff doesn't know what you're talking about when you talk about infrared. And the big companies, they're just simply not interested in this kind of stuff. But if somebody would come up with a couple of million dollars, you could do some very interesting experiments with this.

Our atomic plants, by the way, make electrical energy with steam. We heat the water with the atomic materials. They are nothing more than big steam turbines, and they're generating a hell of a lot of heat. So it's not unusual that these things would hover over atomic plants. In New York State we have a couple of atomic plants. The UFOs are seen all the time around these plants, but I don't think they're interested in our atomic matters at all. They're drawn

to it by the infrared around the plant.

What does all this mean? If you study the UFO phenomenon for very long, you realize that the vast majority of these things are bright lights; they're not metallic objects. There may be metallic objects out there, but what most people are seeing are bright lights. Bright red lights... Again, we're back to infrared. These lights seem to be a compressed form of energy that might even have an intelligence of its own, in the same way that a computer has intelligence. Negative and positive particles are storing information…

We learned several years ago that we are surrounded by an energy field. The entire planet has an energy field around it, which can manipulate all of our electrical apparatus. As I said before, our telephones, televisions, and computers can all be manipulated. We can't believe a damn thing that comes through. If a man's voice appears on a tape recorder and says he's George Bernard Shaw, that doesn't mean it is George Bernard Shaw. It means it's an imitation of George Bernard Shaw. If a voice comes across on a telephone that sounds like your late uncle (and this has happened many times), the voice will usually sound rather distant on the phone. It may use your uncle's favorite expressions. But it doesn't necessarily mean it's your dead uncle. It means it is this force manipulating the telephone. If a picture of Romy Schneider appears on the television set, it either means you've got an old movie or you've got somebody faking the image of Romy Schneider. It doesn't necessarily mean that Romy Schneider is on the television set.

I tried to define this energy field in a book about fifteen years ago called The Eighth Tower. A lot of people didn't understand the book. A lot of people hated the book. In Europe it's now a cult book. It's practically a new Bible over there. I'm afraid to go to Europe because they're going to start worshipping me. But here in the States, they'll throw rocks at me. This energy field seems to operate outside of our space-time continuum. This is very difficult to explain in a few words, but it knows our future as well as our past. Our future already exists.

A simple way to explain this would be a boy looking through a microscope, watching a microbe on a drop of water. The boy can see where the microbe is going before the microbe reaches it. The boy is therefore outside of the space-time continuum of the microbe. The boy can predict what's going to happen to the microbe. There may be a bigger microbe there, about to eat it. The boy

knows this but the microbe doesn't, unfortunately. So whatever this force is (and we've given it a million names throughout history), it knows our future. That's how some people's clairvoyance can tap into this energy field and predict the future.

All of this is testable. We now have the technology to deal with this. But very few people are trying to deal with it. Unfortunately, they're dealing with it only through beliefs. Most of them are trying to prove that there is perpetual life – that we exist after death. That is the wrong approach. We should be studying this field and its affects on all of our apparatus. We should learn how to control it. We have the technology to do this now. It's very predictable that at sometime in the very near future, somebody will come up with the money, the intelligence, and the training to actually interpret all this and learn how to control it. Then, we can literally control the universe. We could predict the future with a machine.

Speaking of which, clairvoyants are wrong most of the time. They usually get the time element all screwed up. They'll say something is going to happen next month, but it happens next year, or doesn't happen at all. Those of you who've read my books know I've had some experience with this. I've received predictions that did come true, but they came true in an awkward way. I received predictions about Martin Luther King's assassination before it happened, but they got the dates wrong. And there was nothing I could do about it.

This is another problem with looking into the future. You can't really change it. But if we have the machinery to do it, and the technology to do it, we may reach a point where we can control the future by changing it. Then we can change the whole destiny of the human race. Of course, human nature being what it is, once we've mastered all this and started controlling the forcefield, we'll probably end up destroying ourselves.

CHAPTER 10

THE UFO NAME GAME – BEYOND REALITY MAGAZINE, JAN. 1976

On Aug. 7, 1806, a group of settlers around the odd formation called Chimney Rock in North Carolina observed an unusual phenomenon. According to the Rev. George Newtown (who published a letter describing the episode in the Raleigh, NC Register that month), a large group of luminous objects appeared in the air around the high column of rock. Some of these objects assumed the forms of human beings, and their luminosity was blinding. A similar formation of lights reappeared there in 1811. The local Cherokee Indians have legends about the place dating back hundreds of years.

One of the principle witnesses named in Rev. Newtown's account was Mrs. Patsy Reeves. One hundred and fifty nine years later, a John Reeves became involved in a sensational, widely publicized "flying saucer" landing in Florida. The following spring, in 1966, a family named Reeves near Salem, Oregon became plagued with strange spheres of light, apparently under intelligent control, which moved about the rooms of their house. Police officers and reporters called to the scene also witnessed the phenomenon. On the surface, these incidents appear to be unconnected coincidences. The witnesses involved were unrelated and were widely separated by space and time.

In Dec. 1967, the Silver Bridge spanning the Ohio River at Pt. Pleasant, WV collapsed, carrying 46 people to their deaths. Point Pleasant had been very much in the news that year, because of the almost constant UFO sightings. One of the (supposed) bridge victims was an Air Force officer named Alvie Maddox.

Three months later, a police officer in Texas named Alvis Maddox was mentioned in the press after allegedly seeing and pursuing a flying saucer in an area where another man, Carol Wayne Watts, was claiming repeated visits from UFOs. (Also, a Dallas police officer named Alvin Maddox was in the news, due to renewed investigation of the JFK assassination.)

Another famous incident revolved around a Californian name Rex Heflin, who

took a series of controversial photographs of a flying saucer in 1965. On April 2, 1971, a Morris Heflin reportedly saw a circular, metallic flying machine near Oklahoma City, OK.

Is the repetition of these names meaningless?

Over the past 28 years, hundreds of thousands of phenomenal events have been described in newspaper, magazines, and books, and hundreds of thousands of witnesses have been named in print. When dealing with such a large body of evidence (or population demographic), certain laws of probability should surface. We might expect that more Smiths would see more UFOs than anybody else, simply because there are more Smiths around. But in actuality, the name Smith rarely appears in a UFO report.

We might also expect the witness populations to conform to the national distributions, racially and religiously. Thus, 10% of all witnesses should be black, because 10% of the population is black. Five percent should be Jewish, 20% should be Catholic, and so on. However, it doesn't work out this way. Sightings of flying saucers and related phenomena appear to occur on a selected basis.

Among the names most frequently noted in UFO reports are Hill, Allen, and Clark. Naturally, a great many other names also appear. Statistically, if 1,000 random events are reported this year, the names and backgrounds of the witnesses should balance out roughly to the distribution of the national population.

What are the odds for someone named Reeves seeing a UFO (or a ghost, for that matter) this year? They are approximately 400 million to one.

The ten most common surnames (Smith, Johnson, Williams(on), Brown, Jones, Miller, Davis, Martin(ez), Anderson, and Wilson, according to the Social Security Administration) should dominate the massive sighting data of the past 28 years. They don't... Jones, for example, rarely appears in UFO reports. The most outstanding case was the low-level sighting of a metallic sphere made by Tad Jones over a highway near Charleston, West Virginia in January 1967.

The New York (Manhattan) telephone directory lists approximately 900,000 people. Of these, only 13 are named Reeve(s), and 10 others spell it "Reaves" – 23 out of 900,000. (There are 9 pages of Smiths.) If a flying saucer should

appear in New York City, and if it should be seen by only 3 people, the odds are far greater that one of those people would be named Smith rather than Reeves.

Heflin is an even rarer name. Only four are listed in the NYC phone book; yet two Heflins have not only been involved in important UFO incidents, but have experienced follow-up events as well. Rex Heflin allegedly received visits from bogus Air Force officers after the existence of his photos was revealed. Morris Heflin saw his mysterious UFO a second time, on May 8, 1971. This is like lightning striking in the same place twice.

Another rare name is Kiehl (or Kiehle, the original spelling of my name). Only three are listed in the Manhattan directory. Shortly after the author's interest in the UFO phenomenon became publicly known in 1966, one William J. Kiehl surfaced on the West Coast and revealed an incredible sighting that had taken place 50 years earlier in Canada.

As a boy, he had seen a saucer-shaped object hover over a lake, he said, and little men were visible. His story, remarkably detailed after such a long lapse of time, appears in the opening chapter of Coral Lorenzen's book The UFO Occupants. So far as is known, no other Kiehl/Kiehle/Keels have been witnesses to any reported phenomena. This makes William J. Kiehl's account all the more remarkable.

The name Clark is number 18 on the Social Security Administration's list. There are at least 385, 206 Clarks in the U.S. A number of Clarks are prominent in ufology. Over the years, several Clarks have been named in sighting reports.

Hill is another name that seems to pop up frequently, the most famous being the late Barney Hill, who supposedly underwent an extraordinary contact experience. Incidentally, he was also one of the few blacks to become publicly identified with the phenomenon. Hill ranks as number 32 on the SSA list (there are 289,655 of them, 480 of whom are listed in the Manhattan directory). Another famous contactee, George Adamski, bore an even scarier name. A mere three are listed in Manhattan.

In a long line of controversial contact reports, the ufonauts have identified themselves with variations of the name Allen. Radio personality "Long John" Nebel has frequently commented on this Allen correlation. The surname Allen

is number 26 on the list, and about 960 Allens are listed in the NYC phone book. Like Clark, Allen has appeared frequently in sighting reports, and a number of Allens are important in UFO lore: Carlos Allende, Dr. Gordon Allen, the Alyn mentioned by assorted contactees, etc.

If UFO sightings were completely sporadic and accidental, as most UFO enthusiasts believe, then many of these coincidences would have been next to impossible. Apparently there is a hidden factor here – a factor of selectivity. Either the phenomenon itself selects certain witnesses because of some obscure genealogical factor (this was, incidentally, one of Adamski's claims), or, if we care to be more pragmatic, certain strains in certain families suffer inherited traits that make them prone to hallucinations or psychic experiences. There is, in fact, interesting evidence that psychic ability is inherited.

In my Flying Saucer Review special, Beyond Condon, and in my books, I have pointed out that the names adopted by the entities usually have roots in ancient mythology. But I have always been baffled by Woodrow Derenberger's alleged contact (West Virginia, 1966) with an entity who called himself "Cold." This might be explained by John Mitchell's research into ancient leys (The View Over Atlantis, Ballantine Books). He points out (on p. 10) that the names "Red, White, and Black are common [along ley routes]: so are Cold or Cole, Dod, Merry, and Ley."

During my wanderings in West Virginia, I found traces of leys. It may be that Derenberger's first encounter took place at a point along an erased ley. UFO events, like religious events, are often allegorical and contain, subtle, hidden clues.

It would take a computer project to sift and correlate the many thousands of names mentioned in the reports of the past 28 years. Statistically, as we have already stated, these reports should be dominated by Smith, Johnsons, Williams, Browns, and so on. In actual fact, less widely distributed names tend to dominate the reports. Those who have investigated and reported phenomenal occurrences in their own areas might list the names of all the people involved, and try to determine their inter-relationship, if any.

It is always important to also collect the racial and religious backgrounds of the witnesses. An extraordinary number of American witnesses are either full-blooded Indians or have some Native blood in their background. In a recent

case now being investigated in Indiana, the only Indian within a 200-mile area has been undergoing a series of repeated experiences with low-flying UFOs.

Flying saucers are not only defying the laws of gravity and inertia, they are also defying the laws of probability in their uncanny selection of witnesses. If UFOs are genuine ultraterrestrial (interdimensional) or extraterrestrial phenomena, then all this is an indication that they know far more about us as individuals than we can suspect or rationalize.

The big question confronting the psychiatrists and psychologists now immersed in UFO studies is: Do the UFOs select their witnesses, or do specific people tend to create UFO experiences from within themselves by some unknown mental process? Why do the Allens, Hills, Reeves, and Heflins see more of these things than the Smiths, Johnsons, and Browns?

Ralph Blum, the New York writer who authored Beyond Earth: Man's Contact With UFOs, told me that he, too, is concerned with the strange coincidences involving names. Many of the place names and surnames in UFO reports, he points out, refer to water in various ways. The name Reeves is similar to a French word meaning "river bank." In English, "reeve" is a nautical term meaning "to pass a rope through a hole."

The seeming importance of this obscure nautical symbolism can be seen in the following story from the pages of the Houston Daily Post (April 28, 1897):

> Merkel, Texas, April 26 - Some parties returning from church last night noticed a heavy object dragging along with a rope attached. They followed it until it caught on a rail crossing the railroad. On looking up, they saw what they supposed was the airship. It was not near enough to get an idea of the dimensions. A light could be seen protruding from several windows; one bright light was in front, like the headlight of a locomotive. After some ten minutes, a man was seen descending the rope. He came near enough to be plainly seen. He wore a light-blue sailor suit, small in size. He stopped when he discovered parties at the anchor. He cut the rope below him and sailed off in a northeast direction. The anchor is now on exhibition at the blacksmith shop of Elliot and Miller, and is attracting the attention of hundreds of people.

A small man in a blue sailor suit climbing down a rope from the sky... Rather silly, isn't it? Sillier still, researchers have discovered two identical stories in very obscure historical texts. An ancient Irish manuscript, the Speculum Regali, gives us this account from A.D. 956:

> A marvel happened in the borough of Cloera, one Sunday while people were at mass. In this town, there is a church to the memory of St. Kinarus. It befell that a metal anchor was dropped from the sky, with a rope attached to it, and one of the sharp flukes caught in the wooden arch above the church door. The people rushed out of the church and saw, in the sky, a ship with men on board, floating at the end of the anchor cable. They saw a man leap overboard and pull himself down the cable to the anchor, as if to unhook it. He appeared as if he were swimming in water. The folk rushed up and tried to seize him, but the bishop forbade the people to hold the man, for fear it might kill him. The man was freed and hurried up the cable to the ship, where the crew cut the rope and the ship rose and sailed away out of sight. The anchor is in the church as a testimony to this singular occurrence.

For many years, a church in Bristol, England, is said to have had a very unique grille on its doors: a grille made from another anchor that allegedly came from the sky. Around A.D. 1200, during the observance of a feast day, the anchor came plummeting out of the sky trailing a rope. It got caught in a mound of stones, according to the story. As a mob of churchgoers gathered around to watch, a "sailor" came down the rope, hand over hand, to free it. This crowd succeeded in grabbing him. They pushed him back and forth until, according to the Gervase of Tilbury's account in the rare manuscript Otia Imperialia, "He suffocated by the mist of our moist atmosphere, and expired." His unseen comrades overhead wisely cut the rope and took off. The anchor remained behind, as in the other stories, and was installed on the church doors…

Reviewing the similarities of these reports, one is almost tempted to speculate that someone merely updated the ancient accounts. Yet, as researcher Lucius Farish recently remarked, "a citizen of Merkel, Texas, possessing a copy of a rare manuscript like the Speculum Regali in 1897 would be fully as fantastic as the reports themselves."

A farmer fifteen miles north of Sioux City, Iowa, Robert Hibbard, claimed a distressing experience with an anchor-dragging UFO early in April of 1897. A dispatch that appeared in the April 5th edition of Michigan's Saginaw Evening News stated that "Hibbard's reputation for truth has never been bad, and the general opinion is that either he 'had them' or dreamed his remarkable experience." The article continues:

> On the night in question, he says he was tramping about his farm in the moonlight when suddenly, a dark body, lighted on each side, with a row of what looked like incandescent lamps, loomed up some distance to the south of him, at a height of perhaps a mile from the ground. He watched it intently until it was directly over his head.
>
> At this point, the craft evidently decided to turn around. In accomplishing this maneuver, the machine sank considerably. Hibbard did not notice a drag rope with a grapnel attached, which dangled from the rear of the boat-like object. Suddenly, as the machine rose again from the ground, it hooked itself firmly in his trousers and shot away again to the south. Had it risen to any considerable height, the result, Hibbard thinks, would have been disastrous. Either his weight was sufficient to keep it near terra firma, or the operator did not care to ascend to a higher level.
>
> On the bank of the dry run, where the farmer finally made his escape, grows a small sapling. Hibbard passed near this obstruction in his flight and, as a last resort, grabbed it with both hands. Instantly there was a sound of tearing cloth, and the machine went on with a section of Hibbard's unmentionables. Hibbard himself fell precipitately into the run. He related his experience to neighbors and, despite their grins of incredulity, firmly maintains the truth of the story.

We have only two choices: We can either dismiss all four of these stories as being somehow derivative of one another and pure poppycock; or, we can assume that mysterious airships, all dragging anchors, appeared in 956, 1200, and 1897. There are, in fact, a number of other reports in which UFOs were said to be dragging something along the ground. That still doesn't prove that anchors are standard equipment on some of the objects. If they were using

anchors, what could the purpose have been? Could some of the early UFOs have been so primitive that the only way they could hover was by being anchored to the ground?

Would spaceships from another world require anchors? Would they need to chase after people whose names seem to refer to anchors (like “Reeves”)?

CHAPTER 11

THE SUBJECT OF SAUCERS – ANOMALY MAGAZINE #1, MAY 1969

A large proportion of the available UFO literature is based upon hearsay and speculation. Many of the real and important problems have been suppressed, at the source, by the witnesses themselves, or have been ignored by superficial investigations that were concentrated on obtaining descriptions of the objects, rather than studying all of the events and factors surrounding the sightings. A massive body of sighting data has now been published, but has gone uncorrelated. The practice of concentrating on the objects alone has produced a very low yield of "hard" facts. The failure of this method – or lack of method – demands that we develop and utilize a new system for collecting and analyzing the data.

This article presents some concrete suggestions for investigating the phenomenon, and it explains briefly some of those findings that appear to contradict popular speculations. We hope that you will begin to apply these methods in your own immediate area, and that you will participate in our study by submitting new reports along these lines. For many valid reasons, we have found that it is more fruitful to shift the emphasis to the witnesses and certain unusual manifestations that they frequently experience.

Many of the aspects that have preoccupied ufologists for years have proven to be misleading, or have failed to contribute to a better understanding of the whole. The UFOs represent only a small part of a much larger phenomenon, which is now occurring on a worldwide scale. By being more thorough and objective in our investigations, we can – and will – learn more about the main phenomenon itself.

Tape recordings are useful documentation but, unfortunately, we cannot possibly audition hundreds of hours of tapes. Try to prepare transcripts and written summaries of your tapes whenever possible. On each tape you make, identify yourself fully, spell out the names of the witnesses to be interviewed, and conduct the interview so that all events are discussed in chronological order.

Thousands of UFO photographs have been taken in the past twenty years, but very few of these have advanced our knowledge of the phenomena. This study is interested only in superbly detailed photographs taken in the presence of two or more witnesses who are willing to sign notarized affidavits. Photographs are too easy to fake, and too difficult to authenticate.

Emotional (political) "causes" frequently blind researchers to important, but hidden, facts. We must abandon the tiresome tactic of trying to prove any "cause." Don't jump to conclusions about the reliability of witnesses or the validity of their stories. Simply collect all the facts and report them. Thousands of important cases have been slighted in the past because unqualified investigators have made hasty negative judgments. Most ufologists confuse skepticism with objectivity. A trained investigator expresses no opinions, but merely collects and records all of the available facts.

In ufology, we are dealing in large part with personal testimony. Testimonial evidence must be collected in the manner approved and utilized by law enforcement agencies and newspaper reporters for centuries. The investigator's personal opinions must not be reflected in the final report. The main body of the report should consist only of the available facts as reported by the witness. Phrases such as "flying saucer," "spaceship," "mothership," etc., should be carefully avoided (unless the witness actually used such terms).

It is virtually impossible to estimate the altitude of an object at night, unless you have certain knowledge of its size. It is impossible to estimate the speed of an object unless you know both its altitude and its size. In daylight, a jet airliner cruising at 400 mph at an altitude of 30,000 feet appears to be moving very slowly across the sky. A small plane traveling at 100 mph at an altitude of 75 feet seems to be moving much faster. Everything is relative. Even pilots, police officers, and military men are unable to make accurate estimates of size, speed, and altitude under the usual UFO sighting conditions. Such estimates can therefore be worthless and misleading. While we must ask the witnesses for such estimates, and should include them in the reports, they should be clearly labeled, and cannot be regarded as "hard data." Objects seen close to the ground can be exceptions, particularly when terrain features are present for valid comparisons.

Many witnesses (the majority) have a poor sense of direction, and often state that an object moved eastward when actually it was moving south. Wherever

possible, recreate the sighting and take compass readings to ascertain the actual direction pursued by the object. Try to locate other witnesses along the possible route.

In low-level sightings, auto pursuits, and other "close encounters," the emotional and physiological responses of the witnesses are extremely important. Get them to explain in detail how they felt immediately before, during, and after the sighting. Did they suffer fear, nausea, and dizziness? did they have unusual dreams afterwards? In some cases, these reactions are more important than the sighting itself.

The sounds accompanying the objects can be of great importance. Many of these sounds have proven to be "mental" – that is, they were not audible movements of air, but electrical responses in the brains of the observers. Beeping sounds frequently indicate the witness was subjected to an unconscious experience. Such witnesses may find they are unable to explain lapses of time or geographical transfers during such sightings. Such witnesses should be examined by a qualified psychiatrist whenever possible. Under no circumstances should any witness be hypnotized by anyone other than a qualified psychiatrist. Amateur hypnotists have ruined several important cases in recent years.

If you should investigate a landing report in which definite markings were left on the ground, photograph these markings and make careful measurements. For the past twenty years, hundreds of landings have been neglected even though the markings are always similar in size and formation. If we had collected and documented photos of all these landings, we would now have an impressive body of correlative evidence.

Witnesses who suffer from burned or inflamed eyes after viewing a UFO should be immediately examined by a professional doctor, and a full medical report obtained. In those cases involving "eye burn" weeks or months previous to the investigation, the investigator should get the witness to draw up a full statement explaining fully the reactions suffered. Medical documentation is most important…

Seemingly irrelevant details often prove to be more important than the main event itself, so try to overlook nothing. If the witness had a toothache prior to the sightings, include that fact, as well as a physical description of the witness

and general outline of their lives and background.

Radioactivity is quite rare, even in landing cases. Geiger counters can easily be misread. If you own a Geiger counter, make certain that you know how to use it properly.

Many witnesses suffer unusual nightmares weeks before their UFO sightings. Others have strange nightmares for weeks afterwards. These dreams are important and you should obtain full descriptions of them. Some witnesses begin to have prophetic dreams after their UFO experience.

A large part of the UFO phenomenon is deliberately deceptive. From 1897 on, it has been a common practice for the UFOs to leave behind ordinary debris such as newspapers, pieces of metal, articles of ordinary clothing, mundane chemicals, and so on. Investigators who have discovered such items have often been led to believe the whole incident was a human hoax or prank of some kind. It is also quite common to find ordinary tire tracks in inaccessible fields where landings have been reported. Do not permit yourself to be misled by these "negative factors." perform a thorough investigation anyway. We have discovered that a multiple group of negative factors often leads to positive proof that a UFO event did occur.

Ancient Greek is often employed by the UFO occupants. Greek names and phrases are frequently used for their nonexistent planets. Many of the entities adopt Greek nouns as their personal names. The witnesses very rarely realize this or understand it. Prepare yourself by obtaining and studying a book on Greek mythology.

[Spy agency] "psychological warfare" techniques are often employed by the UFOS. Diversionary landings, and other seemingly "important" incidents, frequently are staged a few miles from an area where a truly significant UFO activity is taking place. The diversion wins all of our attention and publicity, and the important activity goes unnoticed.

Before you can even begin to understand any of this, you must alter your frame of reference and discard all of your preconceptions. You must learn to accept only the correlative evidence and ignore the assorted speculations that have dominated ufology. We are interested only in hard facts. All of these facts indicate that we are dealing with an environmental phenomenon. But we have been misled into believing the "extraterrestrial" thesis. So long as we accept

the ET concept, the phenomenon and its source are safe and free from interference. Deliberate hoaxes were executed to sustain skepticism and convince governmental agencies that the phenomenon was not real. The ufo buffery was convinced of the ET thesis, which was unacceptable to both the general public and the scientific community. By loudly advocating it, the ET buffs succeeded in heaping ridicule upon the subject. Thus, the UFO source was able to operate unhindered for twenty long years.

All of the evidence, both historical and contemporary, indicates that the ET concept is completely erroneous. ET believers usually rebel at any suggestion that the phenomenon may be hallucinatory or psychological. However, in the past three years, many psychological factors have been discovered. Various groups of psychologists and psychiatrists are now actively engaged in UFO research. Unfortunately, very few ufologists are trained or equipped to understand or investigate the underlying psychological factors.

At least some of the "contact" cases investigated in the past three years have proven to be hallucinatory. We have termed these "induced hallucinations," because it seems that the effects were produced in the witnesses' minds by an exterior influence. These effects are similar to hypnosis. While the witnesses' bodies undergo one sequence of experiences, false memories (confabulation) of another sequence or experiences are planted in their minds.

Frequently the true (but "forgotten") experience surfaces from the witness' subconscious later on, in the form of a dream or nightmare. We cannot outline the whole process here, but it must be considered as a very important factor in many cases. Never even hint of this when interviewing such a witness. Do not attempt to analyze such cases yourself. Simply extract all of the remembered details from the witness and include them in your report. These reports will (hopefully) be collated and studied by qualified psychiatrists.

If we make the mistake of discussing these factors publicly on radio or TV, many witnesses will refuse to submit to interviews, because they will fear that we think they are "crazy." So, the hallucinatory factor must remain a ufological secret until we have built a body of medical evidence to support and explain it.

It is now probable that some UFO sightings are not of real objects, but are actually a variation of this hallucinatory effect. The method and purpose of this effect is now known to a select handful of competent researchers.

There has been a great deal of controversy about the mysterious individuals known collectively as "Men in Black" (MIB), particularly since Brad steiger and I have independently uncovered and reported upon cases in our respective areas. Many different investigators in "flap" areas have now had confirmatory experiences with the MIB. Only a small percentage of these cases have been published. There are several different types of MIB. One group appears to be more psychic, or hallucinatory, than real. They appear and disappear suddenly in bedrooms, and the witnesses often experience paralysis or a sudden rise in temperature during their presence. We now have dozens of such cases in our files.

Another type of MIB now common throughout the U.S. is represented by men who travel in pairs. The same description is always given. One man is tall, blond (usually has a crewcut), fair-complected, and seems to be Scandinavian. His companion is shorter, with angular features and a dark olive complexion. The blond usually does most of the talking, while the other remains in the background. There seems to be several identical pairs of these individuals operating simultaneously in several states.

Men with Oriental features, dark complexions, slight stature, and a heavy, indefinable accent are also frequently reported. These men sometimes pose as salesmen or polltakers. The witnesses usually regard them as a "little strange," but think nothing further about them. Always ask witnesses if they have recently received any "unusual visitors or salesmen," but do not offer any descriptions. See if the witnesses can offer correlative descriptions to the above.

Naturally, every stranger is not an MIB. Never alarm witnesses by displaying an unusual interest in such visitors. Never discuss "silencings" or "Men in Black" with witnesses.

Dark-complected, dark-haired females of about 18 years of age have occasionally been described. It is not unusual for some MIB types to pose as photographers and offer to take free photos of the witness' entire family.

Vehicles used by the MIB range from traditional black Cadillacs and Lincolns to assembly-line Fords and Volkswagens. White station wagons have now been mentioned in a number of widespread incidents.

If men military uniforms approach your witnesses, contact your local Air Force or military base and determine the validity of their identification. In several

cases, the Air Force impersonators have adopted the names of existing officers, but have changed the rank. Thus, when you try to check out a "Col. Robert Withers" you may find that Lt. Robert Withers is actually stationed nearby, but knows nothing of the incident.

Do not attempt to apprehend Men in Black yourself. Do not attack them physically. Approach them with great caution. They frequently employ hypnotic techniques. Collect adequate testimonial evidence before reporting them to the local police or FBI. You must prove that these individuals are breaking the law before the authorities can take any action.

CHAPTER 12

THE CONTACTEE KEY – UFO REPORT, AUG. 1977

When Dr. J. Allen Hynek, America's self-appointed UFO authority, visited the Nixon White House in 1973, he was shunted off to Presidential Adviser Walt Rostow. After explaining that he planned to open a UFO research center in Illinois, Hynek threw out this feeler: "I don't want to duplicate official efforts with a private organization. I don't want to take on another burden if it isn't really necessary."

Mr. Rostow stared at him blandly and replied: "You do not need to know."

In other words, Rostow was telling the famous scientist that government UFO research was none of his business!

Foreign leaders concerned with the UFO question have approached the U.S. government directly for concrete information and also received the runaround. Sir Eric Gairy, Prime Minister of the tiny Caribbean state of Grenada, complained publicly about this in a speech before the United Nations on Oct. 7, 1976. "One wonders why the existence of UFOs continues to remain a secret to those in whose archives repose useful information and other data," Gairy stated. "While we appreciate that some countries consider this to be in the interest of military expedience, I now urge that a different view be taken, because it is my firm conviction that the world is ready, willing, and ripe enough to accept these phenomena in relation to man and his existence on Earth, and in relation to Earth and life in outer space."

Apparently not even Gairy, ruler of a land on the fringe of the mysterious Bermuda Triangle, has a "need to know."

Since the late 1940s, there has been an abundance of rumors and poorly documented allegations that the U.S. government is engaged in a widespread, but completely covert, investigation of the UFO enigma. Civilian researchers have bemoaned the fact that nobody will tell them what is going on. When they try to find out for themselves, they are often subjected to incredible harassment. Their phones are tapped, their mail is tampered with. Insidious, carefully organized campaigns are launched to destroy their credibility. In

several incidents, important witnesses, even entire families, have inexplicably disappeared after their sightings were made public. Hard-boiled newsmen and professional investigative reporters have spent 30 years trying to squeeze substantive information from the Washington bureaucracy, without success.

Strangely, during these three decades there has not been a single important leak of any kind. If a government UFO research project exists, not a single participant has given a speech or written a book. Yet we all know that it is practically impossible for the government to keep a secret for very long. Several former CIA agents have written books and traveled the lecture circuits, telling all. Innumerable military boondoggles have been exposed by the press, despite strenuous coverup attempts. President Nixon was unable to conceal the facts about Watergate even though most of his staff was working around the clock to do so. How, then, could any government agency manage to keep the wraps on the UFO mystery for 30 years?

There are two possible answers:

> No coverup exists. The government is not actively involved in UFO research and has no interest in the subject.
>
> The civilian UFO investigators have been masterfully misled. They have been looking for the wrong clues, examining the wrong evidence, asking the wrong questions, applying the wrong sciences.

There are two ways for a government to deal with a problem of this type. When UFOs first appeared, it was assumed they were technological hardware from an unknown source. So, logically, the problem belonged in the hands of military intelligence. In 1947-48, the Air Technical Intelligence Command (ATIC) assumed responsibility for the study and attempted to determine the exact nature and source of the objects. Standard intelligence techniques were utilized in an attempt to uncover the source or bases of the objects, and to interpret the technology used. It was a sound approach but, apparently, ATIC discovered something unexpected. And as every ufologist knows, the Air Force dropped out of UFO research in 1949, and the project was passed on to the then-infant CIA. After 1949, the Air Force maintained a flimsy public relations effort, while another branch of government turned its full attention to UFO contactees. This suggests that the military specialists actually reached a

dead end. They must have concluded that most UFOs were: 1) not real in an ordinary sense, 2) did not have manufactured hardware, and 3) were not coming from tangible bases either on this planet or from some other point in the universe. If this conclusion is valid, then the subject does not belong to military intelligence, but can only be investigated by another kind of specialist.

There are thousands of specialists in government and civilian practice who, in fact, are sworn to secrecy the day they receive their college diplomas. Retaining confidences is a vital part of their profession. They are, of course, medical doctors and psychiatrists.

Beginning as early as 1950, there were important leaks in this curtain of secrecy. Individuals who claimed direct encounters with the UFO occupants reported that shortly after their experiences became known, they were visited and examined by doctors professing to work for the government. Some were flown to government hospitals at taxpayers' expense. A few were even railroaded into mental institutions, where they could be examined extensively.

At the same time, civilian UFO organizations were maneuvered into adopting a firm anti-contactee stance. Maj. Donald Keyhoe, an influential figure in ufology in the 1950s, led the anti-contactee movement. His Washington-based National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP)) campaigned vigorously against all the contactees who surfaced at that time. Other organizations followed suit, believing the contactees were all hoaxers and were exposing the ufological movement to ridicule. Had these groups applied some fundamental logic to the situation, they might have realized their approach was wrong. If UFOs are intangible, paraphysical objects, then the most sensible avenue of investigation is a careful study of the contactees. By publicly disassociating themselves from the contactees, the early ufologists left this fruitful aspect entirely in the hands of the government. The federal agencies were able to study these people freely, with little or no conflict with civilian groups.

NICAP always proudly listed Adm. R.H. Hillenkoetter as one of its key board members and advisors. Adm. Hillenkoetter had also served as head of the CIA in the early 1950s.

A few cases of medical investigation became celebrated in UFO literature. In 1957, both Reinhold Schmidt and Olden Moore experienced strange after-

effects with their contacts. Schmidt, of Nebraska, was placed briefly in a mental hospital, while Moore (who came from Ohio) was flown to Washington by unidentified agents. Both men underwent extensive mental and psychological testing. These tests were sophisticated and far beyond anything even present-day ufologists employ. These tests were not designed to confirm the reliability of the witnesses. Rather they were geared to find out how much the contactee actually knew or suspected.

By the 1950s, the art of psychological warfare and brainwashing was quite advanced. The use of drugs, hypnosis, and techniques for altering brain patterns were already a part of our psychological warfare arsenal.

Government specialists could induce amnesia, introduce imaginary experiences into the subject's brain, and even alter his entire identity and personality. An eyewitness who "knew too much" (because he or she accidentally had seen something they shouldn't have) could be made to forget the experience totally, or could be manipulated into erratic behavior that would forever discredit their UFO story.

At least one contactee, Howard Menger of New Jersey, finally confessed publicly that his experiences with the UFO entities had somehow been engineered by the CIA. Others recalled being hauled aboard unmarked vehicles (not flying saucers but ordinary cars, trucks, and vans) where they were hypnotized by flashing lights and injected with hypodermic needles.

These strange episodes have not been limited to the United States. Contactees in England, Italy, and throughout South America have reported enjoying free trips to the U.S. Recently, a Venezuelan contactee told me how, in 1974, he had been approached by two men claiming to represent the U.S. Embassy. They flew him to Washington, D.C., where he submitted to a variety of tests for several days. Obviously such investigations cost a great deal of money. Some branch of government must have an overwhelming interest in UFO contactees – and has had this interest since the early 1950s.

The official investigators assume many guises. Woodrow Derenberger of West Virginia was flown to the NASA installation at Cape Kennedy, FL, where he was studied for five days in a basement somewhere on the rocket installation. Others have supposedly been examined by officials from the Smithsonian Institution, the U.S. Navy, and even the U.S. Marines.

In 1966, Mort Young, a reporter for the New York Journal-American, investigated a case in which two young seamen reported seeing a UFO while on duty. They were immediately hustled into a mental hospital. Young found, somewhat to his own astonishment, that this was standard naval procedure at that time. In fact, numerous Air Force personnel, including high-ranking officers, had received the same kind of treatment after reporting a UFO. That is, they were subjected to thorough medical and psychological testing, not to find out if they were nuts, but to find out every detail of their experience – to find out how much they really knew.

My own field investigations began in earnest in 1966. Because of my varied background as an investigative reporter, I quickly discovered the hidden complexities of the UFO situation. I found "silent" contactees in every state of the country and uncovered many unpublicized "abduction" cases. I admit I had been influenced by the early UFO literature and was prejudiced against all contactees at first. But my personal investigations and experiences quickly changed my attitude – so much that I willingly faced the wrath of the ufological establishment by writing my first two articles in 1966 about these seemingly unsavory aspects. My first article in SAGA (Feb. 1967) dealt exclusively with UFO abductions. Paradoxically, the ufological establishment tried to ignore abduction cases until the UFO outbreak of 1973 – six years later.

As I explored these cases, I was disturbed to find many Men in Black incidents, another aspect long held in disrepute by ET believers. While some of these MIB appeared to be apparitions or entities directly related to the UFO phenomenon itself, others seemed to be real government agents. The latter were concerned solely with the UFO "contact" cases. I naturally reasoned that the contact episodes must be of particular importance, since the government was so interested in them.

Originally I assumed that if there was anything to the UFO mystery – if the objects were real and interplanetary – systematic field research should quickly prove this fact. To my chagrin, I found that psychic manifestations overlapped into the UFO cases. I made myself quite unpopular by questioning the reality of the objects. It occurred to me that the real answers, if there were any, could only be found in a careful study of the contactee cases. Obviously, someone within the government had arrived at the same conclusion as far back as 1950. If the contactees were all hoaxers and lunatics, I doubt if the government would have continued their expensive contactee studies for such a long period.

As a newsman, I had many excellent sources within the federal government. One old friend held an important position in the office of the Secretary of the Air Force in the 1960s, and he did his best to penetrate the alleged Air Force secrecy surrounding the subject. Although he came up with small bits of interesting gossip and information, he drew a blank with the more important questions.

Having worked for the government in the past, I knew how the bureaucracy operated and thought. A secret UFO project would be carefully concealed, probably in a seemingly unrelated department like the Dept. of Transportation, or some sub-agency not connected with the Air Force or CIA. The standard journalistic method for ferreting out such projects is to study the budgets of the agencies and search for large, unspecified expenditures. I wasted a lot of time on this. In any case, duplication of effort is common in government, and it is quite possible that several different UFO projects are being conducted by different agencies without any coordination or cooperation.

While I was living in Washington in 1971-72, the newspapers were filled with stories about a mysterious windowless building that had been constructed on government property there. Curious reporters tried vainly to find out which agency had built the structure, even though such basic information is supposed to be freely available (since tax dollars were spent on the project).

If a government group can construct an expensive (and illegal) building in the heart of Washington and keep it a secret, then other groups could possibly set up sub-rosa UFO study projects. If such projects are largely “medical” and run by doctors, our chances of learning anything about them are, alas, slight.

When I realized the contactees might hold the key, I enlisted the aid of a number of doctors and psychologists in the New York area to help me. Some of them later threw their hands up in despair, partly because what they were learning could never be made public without jeopardizing their careers. Another medical man, well-known in UFO research, recently told me the same thing. “The best cases involved such ethical considerations and uncertainties,” he said, “that one is pledged to secrecy.”

There’s the rub. The very nature of our investigations makes in necessary to keep the identities of the witnesses secret. The deeply personal aspects of UFO experiences have an automatic silencing factor. In essence, when a responsible

investigator does stumble onto important information, he finds he cannot reveal it publicly without seriously affecting the lives of the witnesses. This is undoubtedly why some government investigators have advised certain witnesses to keep quiet.

Only a few of the many hundreds of MIB cases have been made public for the reasons stated above. It is apparent, though, that the MIB often employ the same techniques as the elusive government agents. In many cases, it appears that two different groups are involved, and that these groups are actually working against each other. A kind of underground war of nerves is taking place around the world.

A large part of the UFO mystery is nothing more than myths based upon the speculations of bewildered outsiders. The government successfully diverted civilian research for two decades. If Menger and others like him are correct, official brainwashers may have actually worked to create the extraterrestrial theory. The idea was to misdirect the civilian ufological establishment while, in the shadows, some covert government agency quietly tried to get at the real truth.

CHAPTER 13

BEHIND THE FBI'S UNDERCOVER FLYING SAUCER INVESTIGATION – MEN MAGAZINE, 1968

It crossed the dawn-lit French countryside in eerie silence, and the early-rising farmers stood in their fields and stared at it with wonder. At first they thought it was a giant hot-air balloon on fire and about to crash. As it swooped low over the skies near the village of Alençon, it began to whistle. It slowed, rocked up and down as if it were out of control, and then plummeted down onto the top of a high hill. The grass and shrubbery burst into flames from the heat of the object. Crowds of farmers and villagers rushed up the hill to fight the fire.

When they reached the summit, they stopped. The fiery sphere appeared to be some kind of mechanical contrivance. A door on its side suddenly flew open. A man stepped out and looked around uneasily at the gathering crowd. Later, the witnesses described him as looking "just like us, except that he was dressed in strange clothes – very tight-fitting garments." The man mumbled something no one could understand, and then he ran into some nearby woods and disappeared. He was never seen again. A few minutes later, his odd vehicle exploded in complete silence. Nothing was left except granules of metallic powder.

A few days later, Paris sent a police inspector named Liabeuf to the site to investigate. He found that the eyewitnesses included two mayors, a physician, and three other local authorities, in addition to dozens of peasants and farmers. All of their stories matched, detail for detail. Something very unusual had apparently happened at Alençon, but it was never reported to the French Air Force. And for very good reason...

The incident occurred 178 years ago, at 5 a.m. on the morning of June 12, 1790. There were only three or four hot air balloons in the entire world at that time. (The first balloon had been sent up by Montgolfier brothers only eight years earlier.) What and who did these Frenchmen view on that distant date? Many of the details in Inspector Liabeuf 's report are uncomfortably similar to modern "flying saucer" accounts. If this same distinguished group of witnesses were around in 1968 and reported something like this, they would have been

branded “contactees,” subjected to ridicule, and the French Air force would probably have explained the UFO away as a “weather balloon.”

Unidentified flying objects have been turning up throughout history. Many thousands of people claim to have actually seen and even spoken with the “ufonauts” (pilots).

Not all of these people can be lumped into the category of “kooks, cultists, and crackpots.” Their constantly growing ranks include judges, senators, doctors, lawyers, engineers, and hard-boiled newspapermen. A good many of these witnesses understandably choose to remain silent about their experiences, because so much controversy and ridicule has been heaped upon “contactees” who dared to publicly reveal their encounters with the “flying saucer people.”

“People” may be the right term, too. In many reports, the ufonauts are described as looking just like us, with human features and an apparent ability to breathe our atmosphere without difficulty. But there have also been a spate of stories involving “little men” in “diving suits,” and “giants” in “space suits” complete with transparent helmets. “Contacts” with the flying saucer pilots have now been reported from every country on Earth, including the Soviet Union. Since very few of these stories are widely publicized or circulated, it is remarkable that so many witnesses, so separated by distance, could come up with the same correlative details. It is easy for us to dismiss the single reports as being the work of liars and cranks but, in the past 20 years, over 2,500 such stories have been carefully investigated by trained scientists and reporters on every continent. And historians have unearthed hundreds more going all the way back to ancient Roman times. The sightings of the flying saucers themselves (there are now over 100,000 fully documented sightings from all over the world) pall into insignificance beside this mass of data about the UFO occupants.

Deep in East Africa, the residents of the tiny village of Baira, Mozambique reported an incident in April 1960 that is almost identical to that 1790 “touchdown” (landing) in France. According to the story filed by the Portuguese news service Lusitania, hundreds of villagers saw a whistling orange object land in a field outside Baira, and a group of “tiny little men” leaped out of it. They ran into the forest just as the thing exploded. Searchers could find no trace of the “little men,” either. The objects and their pilots have an uncanny way of disappearing without leaving any evidence behind, and it is

this absence of hard physical evidence that keeps anti-UFO skepticism alive.

Since the flying saucers and their peculiar occupants have apparently been busy in our skies since the beginning of history (there are extensive UFO descriptions in Hindu scriptures dating back 5000 years and, of course, there are several UFO-like accounts in the Holy Bible), it seems unlikely that "they" will ever provide us with concrete evidence or enter into formal and open contact with our governments. The UFO buffs have been waiting patiently for twenty years now, hoping that one day soon, a flying saucer will land on the White House lawn or settle in front of the United Nations. This will probably never happen. Indeed, if some of the UFO pilots look just like us, there is no need for this to happen. They could easily walk our streets and even move into our apartment buildings without ever being noticed. And it does seem as if they want it that way.

Sure, this sounds like a bad plot from the TV series, The Invaders. But, to coin a cliché, fiction is always struggling to keep up with fact.

In 1866, a man in Massachusetts named William Denton announced that he was in contact with beings from other planets. He said they looked just like us, could speak our languages, and flew through the skies in saucer-shaped machines made from aluminum. (The commercial process for manufacturing aluminum was not developed until 1886.) Mr. Denton also explained that they could communicate silently via mental telepathy. Needless to say, not very many people took these startling revelations seriously. There had been other "contacts" in 1823 and 1846 but, of course, nobody paid much attention.

In March and April of 1897, thousands of people all over the U.S. reported seeing gigantic cigar-shaped machines in the sky (this was long before any kind of dirigible had been successfully flown in the U.S.), and many told of landings and casual chats with the pilots. What did these pilots look like? Fortunately, there were hundreds of extensive newspaper stories on these incidents throughout the period. UFO researchers have burrowed into the old files and come up with hundreds of interesting items. The pilots of the 1897 "airships" were slight in stature, had dark olive skin, deep black eyes, and long fingers. They spoke perfect English, according to the witnesses.

Not all of the UFO occupants are male, either. There are many stories of "beautiful ladies" alighting from the objects.

An ex-Senator named Harris, from Harrisburg, Arkansas, testified that a strange flying machine landed on his farm early on the morning of April 21, 1897, and that two men and a woman stepped out to draw water from his well. A week earlier, a similar object allegedly landed on a farm near Springfield, IL. Two men and a woman disembarked from it briefly to chat with Adolph Winkle and John Hulle. Both farmers later signed notarized affidavits swearing to the truth of their story.

A pair of Arkansas lawmen, Constable John J. Sumpter and Deputy Sheriff John McLemore, also signed sworn affidavits claiming that they saw a luminous object land on the night of May 6, 1897, in Garland County. They said that two men and a woman appeared, and filled a sack with water from a well while they watched. In all three of these cases, one of the men was said to have sported a waist-length beard of "silken" whiskers and acted as the spokesman. Bearded ufonauts were also reported by a large group of witnesses at Bell Plains, Iowa, on April 15th of that year.

There were scores of other "contacts" in 1897, and hundreds of detailed aerial sightings. The objects themselves flew low over Chicago, Omaha, San Francisco, and even Washington, D.C. They were viewed by thousands of people. When all of these reports were sifted and organized by dates, it was obvious that many "airships" were involved, for they appeared simultaneously over dozens of localities on a single date.

There are now many hundreds of "little men" reports from all over the world. In the majority of these, the witnesses describe the creatures as having Oriental-like eyes, lipless slit-like mouths, and long, slender hands. They seem to share these physical characteristics with the taller (usually 5'9") ufonauts who have now been reported in abundance, particularly in North and South America. The beings who purportedly abducted Betty and Barney Hill in New Hampshire, in 1961, were described by them as being less than five feet tall and having "wraparound" eyes. Usually they are said to be dressed in tight-fitting black coveralls or in "silver suits." Occasionally there have been reports of green-suited creatures. Early reports of such types gave rise to the "little green men" stories. In approximately 80% of the known contact cases (both tall and short), the ufonauts have been described as having dark or olive complexions.

Where all of these "people" are coming from is a complicated part of the

mystery, and there are no real clues. We can only note that they seem to reappear consistently in the same isolated and thinly populated areas, year after year. Michigan, Minnesota, and Arkansas had hundreds of sightings in 1897, and the objects were back in strength in the same areas throughout 1966-67. In some areas, UFO sightings can be traced back hundreds of years. It almost seems as if it is a local phenomenon. Why, we must ask, would beings from another planet travel to the dustbowl of Oklahoma year after year, century after century? Local Indian legends of the "Sky People" go back many centuries.

The many "contact" reports and creature sightings, sometimes involving dozens of witnesses, mean that we must exclude purely natural causes for the phenomenon such as "ball lightning," meteors, weather balloons, and the like. The objects are obviously manned, and we now know a great deal about those occupants (although we still don't know enough).

We also have very good reason to believe that there is a group or organization of people living amongst us who do not want us to find out what is really going on… The U.S Air Force now admits that they have been trying to catch the unknown persons who have masqueraded in Air force uniforms and threatened American citizens, sometimes only minutes after those citizens had observed a UFO – and before they had a chance to report their sighting to anybody. The air Force now quietly hands over UFO cases to the FBI, not to harass the witnesses, but to find out who is harassing them!

The "contactees" have allegedly been subjected to all kinds of harassment in the past twenty years. A few have published books and articles outlining the real and imagined outrages committed against them. But most have suffered in silence, whispering among themselves about the "government agents" who tap their phones, tamper with their mail, and follow them doggedly in gleaming black Cadillacs. Those who have managed to get a good look at their pursuers have usually described them as being either "short, stocky men in gray suits" or "dark-complexioned men, about five feet, nine inches tall, with high cheekbones and angular faces, dressed in black suits." In essence, they are unwittingly describing the known characteristics of the UFO occupants themselves!

Are there two groups involved here, both of the same racial origin, but in conflict with each other? The testimonial evidence seems to indicate this. One

group seems to be trying almost desperately to gain our attention, while the other group is working equally hard to suppress the witnesses and keep down the flow of information from their "enemy." The government and the Air Force may be caught in the middle and, thanks to the skillful manipulations of the suppression group (who pose as air Force officers, etc.), are inadvertently being blamed.

The UFO buffs have blandly simplified an extraordinarily complicated situation. They have been propagandizing for years, trying to tell us that "a superior extraterrestrial intelligence with an advanced technology" is "surveying" our planet and making plans to land and save us from ourselves. If it were not for the extensive historical documentation, we might be able to believe that the "flying saucers" are really some secret device from the U.S. or Russia. But this has been going on for too long. The data simply does not fit these over-simplified concepts.

Something else is happening here. Something very frightening...

Let's consider a single heavily investigated and well-documented case that recently made headlines. The newspaper stories were superficial, so the full facts are being revealed here for the first time.

The hero of this bizarre story is a rugged 29-yr. old farmer named Carroll Wayne Watts, a man who enjoys an impeccable reputation for honesty and integrity in his hometown of Wellington, TX. At 10:30 on the night of Friday, March 31, 1967, Watts was working around his barn when he noticed a light moving near an abandoned house belonging to his uncle. Suspecting thieves or trespassers were up to no good, he jumped into his car and headed for the building. As he drew closer to the light, he was startled to see that it was part of a cylindrical object about 100 feet long and 8 or 10 feet high.

"At first I wasn't frightened at all," he later told investigators. "I thought it must be some new aircraft the Air Force had developed, and that it must have made an emergency landing or something. I know this sounds odd, but that was the first thing I thought of. I also thought that there might be injured crewmen aboard, and I wondered how to find out, since there weren't any windows or doors."

He got out of his car and approached the machine, which appeared to be hovering two or three feet above the ground.

"Suddenly, a door that I hadn't detected before slid open – something like an elevator door," he said.

> And that was when I began getting scared; though, somehow, I just stood there, looking into this opening. Inside, there were no crew or anything, just machinery and all kinds of meters and dials, lit up by a strange bluish light.
>
> Then there was a loud cracking like the beginning of a Victrola record. A voice, sounding like it came from a machine or was recorded, began talking to me. It knew my name and everything, and it told me that it wanted to give me a physical examination. It said no harm would come to me whatsoever, and that the examination would be completely painless.
>
> They pointed out a machine against the opposite wall from where I was standing. They said all I had to do was stand before the machine to take the physical… About two or three feet from the machine was a map. It was about a yard square and began about a foot from the floor. It appeared to be a large-scale land map, but I couldn't tell what it was a map of.
>
> They – whoever "they" are – said they were stationed all over the world, and could come and go as they pleased; no one could stop them. When I declined the physical, they told me that several people had taken the test and made flights.

Mr. Watts left the object hurriedly and abandoned his car, leaving it with its motor running, to hurry back to his farm on foot. He told his wife the story, and decided to call his cousin, Don Nunnelly, who happens to be the Chief of Police in Wellington. Both Nunnelly and Collingsworth County Sheriff John Rainey drove immediately to Watts' farm, and they all went to the site. The object was gone, but Watts' vehicle was still there with its engine running.

Preposterous though it may seem, Carroll Watts' story is not an unusual one. Over the years, many witnesses have claimed identical experiences. A rocket engineer named Dan Fry became the center of controversy when he claimed he encountered a saucer-shaped object in the desert near White Sands, NM on July 4, 1950, and that a voice invited him aboard and took him for a jaunt across the country. Another technician, California TV repairman and ham-radio

operator named Sidney Padrick, reported that a voice also invited him onto a spherical object, on a beach near Monterey Bay, early on the morning of Jan. 30, 1965. But Carroll Watts' narrative seems to pick up where the others leave off.

Two weeks after Watts' initial experience, on Tues., April 11, 1967, he said he saw another light near his home. This time, the engine of his pickup truck stalled when he tried to approach it. He got out of the cab and found a metallic, egg-shaped object hovering directly behind his vehicle. A door opened, he testified, and four small men appeared. They were all less than five feet tall, seemed muscular, and had elongated eyes and slit-like mouths, which did not move when they spoke. They were dressed in "white coverall-type suits." They addressed him in English, he claimed, and asked him if he would go with them. This time, he agreed.

Watts reported that he was flown to a much larger craft, possibly somewhere in space, where he was examined by some sort of machine that probed his body with wires. He tried to pick up and retain a small cube from a table onboard the craft, and the next thing he knew he was back in his truck, regaining consciousness.

In the months that followed, Watts saw the "little men" again and took a total of eleven pictures of them and their craft. Six of these were eventually turned over to the FBI (who took him most seriously). One of the "little men" pictures went to Dr. J. Allen Hynek, the astronomer who has served as official UFO consultant to the air force for 20 years. Dr. Hynek was widely quoted in the press as saying that no fraud seemed to be involved. "If this is a hoax," Hynek declared, "it is a very, very clever one. In fact, it would be such a clever hoax that it would be almost as interesting as what this farmer claims has happened to him."

Carroll Wayne Watts had nothing to gain by making up such a story. Indeed, he had risked his very fine reputation by revealing it publicly. Everyone who knew him supported him. Many other residents in his area had also seen peculiar flying objects, including Chief of Police Alvis Maddox of nearby Childress, TX, who pursued a UFO for several miles outside of Wellington on the night of March 2, 1968. Sheriff John Rainey also saw that object. Both men said that it was a "huge bright light" moving over U.S. 83 at an altitude of about 500 feet.

Dr. Hynek suggested that Watts submit to a lie-detector test and the young farmer welcomed the idea. On Sunday, Feb. 23, 1968, he started out for Amarillo, where the test was to be administered by the Amarillo Security Control Company. Near Hedley, TX, on Rt. 287, Watts came upon a 1957 Plymouth that was apparently in trouble. A woman stood next to it, looking rather helpless, so he pulled over to the side of the road and stopped to see if he could help her. As he approached her, two rugged men carrying rifles suddenly popped up from under a nearby culvert and threatened him, or so he claimed. Watts said they struck him about the shoulders with their weapons and warned him that if he passed the lie-detector test, he would never return home alive.

It was a very distraught man who walked into Amarillo Security Control Company that afternoon. Watts submitted nervously but deliberately lied, he declared later, so that the results would be negative.

When he returned home that evening, he noticed a car parked some distance away. It began to cruise back and forth in front of his home with its headlights out. Watts dug out his M-1 rifle, loaded it, and hid behind a storm cellar next to the house. On the car's final pass, there were three loud reports, like shots, Watts claimed. He fired back with his M-1, shooting at the retreating car several times. Then he called the police. Investigators found the spent cartridges next to the storm cellar, but there were no marks of any kind on the house.

A former Air Force officer, Capt. Robert B. Loftin, visited Watts and filed a detailed report with the aerial phenomenon research organization (APRO) in Tucson, AZ. Reporters for Saucer News, Michael Femora and Richard E. Wallace, also investigated. They were all impressed with Watts' obvious sincerity and the straightforward manner in which he related his incredible story. He passed rigorous cross-examinations.

Whether or not Carroll Wayne Watts actually talked with "little men" from a UFO and submitted to a physical examination almost seems to be a side issue in this case. His story of "contact" contained all of the little-known details and correlative factors. His friends, neighbors, and the local authorities backed him to the hilt. He managed to convince experienced investigators that he was telling the truth. If the man was making it all up, what was his motive? After the results of the lie-detector test were made public, he was subjected to

considerable ridicule by the press. The story of that test was circulated nationally by the wire services. Watts doesn't stand to make a nickel from all this. (In fact, contrary to all the myths, none of the "public contactees" have profited from their experiences. The most famous of them all, George Adamski, died broke.)

But if two men did attack and threaten Carroll Watts, who were they? And why was it so important to them that his story should be ridiculed and not taken seriously?

Watts is only one in a long line of UFO witnesses who have suffered in this manner. We have no way of telling how many people were effectively and totally silenced by these tactics. Nor can we guess how long this sort of thing has been going on. Perhaps it all started in 1896, or even earlier. And we are only just now getting wise to the existence of the mysterious "silence group." Sid Padrick, the California TV repairman, talked freely with newsmen about his experiences back in 1965, but now he has fallen silent and refuses to discuss UFOs with anyone. Howard Menger, a "contactee" who created a sensation with his tales from High Bridge, NJ in 1956-57, later voluntarily appeared on a national television show emceed by Long John Nebel and astounded everyone by publicly refuting his earlier claims. It was hardly necessary for him to go on TV and tell the world in essence, "I was mistaken. It was all a lie, folks."

Who is scaring people into taking such drastic steps?

If the UFOs have been present in our skies for many centuries, as all of the evidence indicates, then it is only logical to assume that many, many people have had chance or deliberate encounters with the ufonauts. Why don't we hear more about these people? Perhaps it is because that "silence group" has been doing a good job.

Men who investigate the UFO phenomenon have also been "silenced" in large numbers. Dr. Morris k. Jessup, a well-known astrophysicist who wrote several excellent books on the subject, committed suicide in 1959. Others have died suddenly or simply disappeared without a trace, such as George Hunt Williamson, another UFO author. Still others, such as Prof. Gordon Evans, have abruptly dropped the whole business after years of dedicated study. Why?

Are these peculiar pilots really "stationed all over the world," as they

allegedly claimed? If so, is there another group living amongst us, trying to keep us from finding out? The evidence suggests that the "silence group" not only exists, but they will stop at nothing – not even murder – to accomplish their purpose.

The cultists and UFO buffs delight in talking about "Big Brothers" from outer space that are coming to save us from ourselves. It's a happy concept, but there's absolutely no evidence to support it. Instead, we should be worrying about the rifle-bearing thugs who are driving along our highways in inconspicuous old cars, and the ersatz "Air Force" officers who are busily confiscating UFO photographs and telling witnesses to keep their mouths shut.

Somebody up there loathes us!

CHAPTER 14

MYSTERY OF THE INVISIBLE FLYING SAUCERS – SAGA MAGAZINE, WINTER 1974

The term "flying saucer" was unknown during World War II. Except for a small group of hobbyists loosely organized by Tiffany Thayer's Fortean Society, no one knew – or cared – about the strange unidentified flying objects that had been regularly sighted through the centuries. But in 1944, U.S. Army Air Corps pilots in Europe began seeing and reporting strange, luminous spheres over Germany, which first were thought to be Nazi secret weapons. They were labeled "Foo Fighters." Halfway around the world, Allied intelligence teams in the Pacific were wrestling with an even more bewildering phenomenon: formations of invisible flying objects.

As Allied task forces collected along the Nansei-shoto Archipelago for the invasion of Okinawa, their radar picked up a large blip indicating a huge formation of 200 to 300 aircraft closing in on the Allied fleet. Even more alarming, radar clocked the objects at speeds exceeding the speed of sound! Supersonic planes were not developed until after the war, and the battered Japanese could not have had a large number of aircraft in the area. A dozen Navy planes were launched from aircraft carriers to intercept the mysterious intruders. Radar operators watched as the huge armada of unknown craft spread out. According to their electronic gear, the Navy pilots were soon flying over the unidentified formation. Incredibly, the American pilots saw absolutely nothing, although visibility was perfect. Radar officers watched helplessly as the invisible armada soared over the fleet and disappeared.

The Navy checked and rechecked their equipment. Nothing was wrong. Later, other ships also picked up radar blips of objects that could not be seen. The episode was classified as the "Ghosts of Nansei-shoto," and was not revealed to the public until after the war.

Radar was admittedly a crude device during WWII, but technical advances were rapid. Radar sets were made small enough so they could be carried by jetfighters, and during the Korean conflict planes repeatedly zeroed in on objects that were not there. Radar would spot flying objects and vector the

plane in on it but, when the pilot neared his target, he couldn't see it.

The British learned to foul up German radar during WWII by dumping strips of metal foil ("chaff") from their bombers. This technique was first used in the raid on Hamburg on July 24, 1943. The drifting chaff filled enemy radarscopes with false images. Eventually, both sides developed electronic systems that automatically filtered out false returns from the foil.

By 1954, radar was considerably more sophisticated and reliable than it had been during WWII. Nevertheless, in September 1954, British radar stations were plagued by a new epidemic of mysterious "bogeys." Each day at noon, a U-shaped formation of 40 to 50 objects passed low over radar installations at airports and defense centers. But when the radar operators stepped outside to look for the formation, they saw absolutely nothing. The British defense ministry conducted an extensive investigation, but failed to come up with any explanation. Unlike chaff, or even flocks of birds, the phantom blips moved with military precision, often changing from the U-formation to a Z-formation as they passed overhead.

In a story published in the London Sunday Dispatch, a military spokesman was quoted as saying, "They are invisible to the human eye. Every time, they have followed the same pattern, always around midday. All our radar sets in the area have picked them up… Even if I did know what they are, I am too worried to say anything."

The invention of the transistor made possible the development of the "black boxes" that became an important part of our arsenal in the late 1950s and early '60s. These black boxes are, in effect, transmitters that can send signals on the wavelengths of the enemy radar and create false images or jam enemy sets. But the Japanese certainly did not have such devices during the Okinawa campaign, nor were they in use in 1954.

Another device, also developed long after the war, is the Luneberg lens, a sphere about 12 inches in diameter, which concentrates the beam from enemy radar and reflects it back so that it produces a radar echo equal to an object 700 feet across. This gadget could produce some of the radar UFO's that have been reported over the years – even the huge blips at Nansei-shoto. But the Japanese did not have the Luneberg lens.

The only explanation is that in 1944, and again in 1954, a number of unrelated

radar sets all went haywire at exactly the same moment and produced identical false echoes. Some "impossible" explanations could include the presence of an invisible spherical object bouncing the signals in the manner of the Luneberg lens, or the presence of an unknown aircraft equipped with electronic gear years ahead of our own. There is evidence that ultra-sophisticated submarines belonging to no known nation have been plying our seas for years. Any UFO enthusiast will tell you about the "superior intelligence with advanced technology" that is assumedly behind the flying saucer mystery.

We now have even perfected "stealth" devices that render aircraft invisible to radar. They absorb the enemy signal so he can't receive any echo at all. And today we have satellites orbiting the Earth that can broadcast signals that could confuse radar sets over half the planet. We have come a long way from the days when British gunners dumped boxes of chaff out of their gun ports… In view of all these developments and techniques, radar sightings of unidentified flying objects lose much of their impact. But the late Dr. James McDonald, a meteorologist and radar expert, studied a number of these controversial UFO radar sightings, and could find no conventional explanation for them.

Aside from the puzzling radar reports of the past 30 years, is there any other evidence that some UFOs might be invisible? There is indeed! In fact, it even seems possible that UFOs are normally invisible, and are seen only by accident or design. This is such a mind-boggling concept that most flying saucer researchers reject it out of hand and ignore the evidence that tends to support it. Yet one of England's foremost military leaders (a recognized authority on the UFO phenomenon) openly discussed the subject of invisibility in a public lecture in London in 1969. He is RAF Air Marshal Sir Victor Goddard. Of cabinet rank, Sir Victor was active during the RAF's UFO investigations of the 1950s. "If the materiality of UFOs is paraphysical (and consequently normally invisible), UFOs could more plausibly be creations of an invisible world coincident with the space of our physical Earth," Sir Victor said. He was talking about the widely held theory that flying saucers are interdimensional rather than interplanetary. The theory seemed completely wild when it was first advanced by Dr. Meade Layne in the 1940s, but was later accepted by such men as Lord Dowding (head of the RAF during the Battle of Britain) and Brinsley Le Poer Trench, one of England's most famous ufologists.

In thousands of sightings recorded since 1947, witnesses have claimed that

UFOs suddenly appeared and disappeared. In many of the landing reports, the objects did not descend from the sky but seemed to appear instantaneously on the ground, according to the amazed witnesses. And in many accounts, the objects are described as being completely transparent... During the August 1965 “flap” in Grand Forks, ND, six witnesses said they saw a blinking, transparent object resting on a golf course, and that it contained “little figures inside, moving like silhouettes.” When the witnesses ran toward the object, it disappeared with a loud bang. “It just blew up,” one of them said.

One of the most interesting of the “transparent” sightings occurred on Oct. 18, 1968. The McMullen family in Medulla, FL, looked outside their home when their dog began to howl and bark. They reportedly saw a purplish-red object hovering about 10 feet off the ground. A strong odor of ammonia was present. The object was completely transparent, and two normal-sized men were visible inside. As the McMullens watched, the 30-foot sphere slowly ascended and flew away.

But there is a strange footnote to this story. Mrs. McMullen made a sketch of the object showing the positions of the two men inside the sphere. Later, Mr. F.W. Holiday, a thorough British researcher and author, discovered that her drawing was “very nearly identical” to a carving on a slab of stone at Kivik in Scandinavia! The carving is thousands of years old, and has long puzzled archaeologists. Did the ancient people of Kivik see the same thing that appeared in Medulla, FL in 1968? And did they feel it was important enough that it should be carved in stone?

The lore of invisible flying objects does extend back thousands of years. Ancient records in India not only describe saucer-shaped objects that flew by making strange music (probably an attempt to describe the humming and whining sounds associated with UFOs), but also mention that these objects could be invisible to human eyes. Some UFOs have been described as being completely transparent at first, then slowly turning opaque in front of the astonished onlookers. Finally, in many instances, brave witnesses have claimed that when they attempted to approach a grounded UFO, they found themselves barred by an invisible wall or shield around the object.

In 1967, a young official from the United Nations told me a strange story about something that had happened to him several years earlier. He and a couple of friends had been driving along a deserted country road in New England, in

broad daylight, when suddenly their car collided with something unseen. "It was like hitting a brick wall," he said. The entire front of the car was demolished and the passengers were badly shaken, but there was absolutely nothing to be seen on the road. Their car had crashed into something that was totally invisible… That may sound farfetched, but there have actually been several airplane accidents where the planes crashed into something solid and invisible in mid-air. On June 11, 1938, the Chicago Daily News reported the crash of a U.S. Army bomber outside Delaware, IL. Nine men were killed after what one ground witness described as a "sudden crash in mid-air." Crash with what? No one knows.

After a thorough study of the debris of a jetliner that crashed outside Calcutta, India, on May 2, 1953, the British Ministry of Civil Aviation announced that it had "collided with a fairly heavy body." Witnesses said there was no other plane near the doomed airliner when it "seemed to stop short in mid-air" and crashed… Then a B-47 smacked into something solid in October 1955, and only one man survived. He was quoted in the newspaper accounts as saying that the plane was "struck in mid-air" with a jolt so terrific he thought they had smashed into the ground. That crash took place near Lovington, NM, and authorities said there were no other planes in the vicinity. One witness on the ground did claim, however, that a ball of fire appeared near the plane just before the crash… There have been several other aerial disasters of this sort, all indicating that invisible objects are a constant hazard in our skies. As if this isn't enough, each year several ships collide with unseen objects in the oceans – objects that shouldn't be there and are never located afterwards…

Perhaps the strangest phenomena of all are the "Invos" – invisible entities who harass UFO witnesses and investigators during flap periods. These characters have been widely reported, but have received very little publicity, perhaps because they seem so closely related to traditional psychic phenomena. Parapsychologists tend to regard the "Invos" as a variation of the well-known poltergeist.

There was virtually an epidemic of "Invos" in the 1967-68 period when many people were involved in UFO research. Some of the incidents seemed ludicrous and others were bloodcurdling. One family in West Virginia not only saw low-flying UFOs practically every night, but their house was seemingly haunted by "Invos" who unlocked doors, slammed kitchen cabinets, and caused so much confusion that the family finally moved to another house. Other

“Invos” trod heavily up and down stairs and created the sound of a car door slamming when there was no vehicle in sight. This slamming phenomenon has been reported by UFO witnesses in many sections of the country.

Then, too, there are those invisible creatures accompanied by the smell of ammonia or, worse, the rank odor of rotten eggs (hydrogen sulfide). Their odor announces their presence before they begin to play their tricks, such as moving objects, hiding things, and even starting fires. It was curious that homes that had never before been haunted were suddenly invaded by “Invos” immediately after (and sometimes immediately before) UFOs were seen in their vicinity. The “Invos” seemed to accompany the UFO phenomenon. A number of investigators had problems with them soon after getting involved in a particularly important case.

Some “Invos” seem to have trouble breathing. They make a loud, very audible gasping sound, as if they were choking for air. One UFO researcher heard heavy breathing in her backyard one afternoon, so she filled a pail with water and hurled it off her back porch. There was a wild commotion, though not a thing could be seen.

If there are invisible flying saucers, why shouldn’t there be invisible saucer pilots, too? The foul odors have been associated with many UFO sightings, such as the McMullen report, and the heavy breathers have allegedly been seen as well as heard. In a number of controversial contactee cases, witnesses have noted that the ufonauts seemed to have trouble breathing and spoke in short gasps. In 1955, the late Gen. George c. Marshall, one of our top military leaders, made a fantastic statement about flying saucers, in which he implied that the pilots were having trouble breathing our atmosphere!

But is invisibility really possible? Light is a form of electromagnetic energy, and visible light covers only a very small part of this spectrum. You are surrounded at this very moment by all forms of energy. If your eyes could take in waves slightly higher on the electromagnetic scale, you would see these energies as a multitude of colors. A small percentage of the total population is able to see slightly beyond the visible spectrum. Such people are more apt to see ghosts, apparitions, and flying saucers.

Early man was quite aware that psychic ability was simply the ability to see slightly beyond the range of normal vision, and that this dimension was

inhabited by strange things invisible to most people. Animals are not only able to see into this invisible zone, but they can also hear sounds above the level of human hearing. Very often, UFO witnesses like the McMullens are alerted by a dog, horse, or cat. Animals behave hysterically in the presence of UFOs, even when human witnesses can't hear or see anything unusual.

Recent studies indicate that the UFO phenomenon is closely related to the Earth's magnetic field. When certain magnetic conditions exist, certain people in particular geographic locations begin to see UFOs, and a "flap" results. These conditions are cyclic, peaking every four to five years, with a major peak every 19 years. The UFOs do not come and go as spaceships. They are always around, but we can only see them when special conditions exist. So, the problem is environmental rather than extraterrestrial. Scientists currently working in a number of disciplines are putting all this to the test. Within the next few years, we will arrive at a new understanding of the strange "invisible world" that has always existed around us, and was even well known and well defined in ancient times.

The geographical locations where these things tend to occur were isolated by occultists hundreds of years ago. They called such places "gateways."

Ufologists called them "windows." Charles fort, the founder of ufology, wrote about this subject in the 1920s. Modern ufologists were diverted, however, by the enchanting extraterrestrial hypothesis, and wasted 25 years trying to find evidence proving that UFOs were spaceships from another planet. Meanwhile, every time there was unusual sunspot activity or a sudden burst of electromagnetic energy from Jupiter, a wave of flying saucer sightings would take place in the "window" areas. It took us a long time to realize that the key was a more careful study of the witnesses and their psychic abilities. These people were gaining momentary glimpses of things that had been there all along, beyond our normal sensory field. The ancients in Kivik may have even seen the very same entities viewed by the McMullens in 1968.

In 1973, there was some very unusual activity on the sun, accompanied by some strange disturbances of the Earth's magnetic field. Simultaneously, a great worldwide wave of UFO sightings occurred, along with a sharp increase in psychic phenomena and the appearances of awesome, hairy, red-eyed monsters (the latter were often accompanied by strange lights in the sky). Apparently all these things are interrelated, and share a common cause. That

cause, to greatly simplify, may be a magnetic influence upon the witnesses in the "window" areas!

Modern technology has now given us the tools to "see" beyond the normal, and some of these tools were grossly neglected by ufologists for years. For example, back in the mid-1950s, an engineer in California, Trevor James constable, revealed that he was experimenting with infrared photography. He hauled his equipment to the desert and photographed stretches of empty sky. Some of these photographs revealed curious blobs and objects that had not been visible to the naked eye. Instead of welcoming this discovery, UFO research organizations attacked Constable. Later, qualified scientists and engineers quietly repeated his experiments, with the same intriguing results. And a national magazine sent a team of professional photographers to New York's Croton Reservoir in 1966, where, using infrared film and filters, they, too, obtained photographs of invisible objects.

Over the years, astonished amateur cameramen in many parts of the world have taken UFO pictures unexpectedly. Usually they were just photographing some landmark or pastoral scene, but when the pictures were developed, objects appeared that they didn't see at the time. One of the most publicized pictures of this type was taken by a fireman in England, in May 1963. James Templeton had photographed his little girl in a park near an atomic energy station. Later, when he went to the camera store to pick up the developed pictures, the clerk told him that "it was a shame the best picture had been spoiled by the man in the background wearing a white suit."

"I thought the clerk was joking at first," Mr. Templeton told me in a personal letter, "because there was not another soul in the vicinity when I took the photograph." But there, on the negative, is the clear image of a tall, bloated figure in a white outfit, with a helmet on his head. This figure did not appear in any of the pictures he had taken immediately before and immediately after. He showed the puzzling photograph to the local police, who then forwarded copies to Police HQ in Penrith, England, where it was studied by experts. Film company officials said it was impossible for any kind of exposure to have been made on the film before it had been sold to Templeton. Supt. Tom Oldcorn, head of the Carleton CID, made the understatement of the year when he said, "My photography men have had a look at the print and film, and the feeling is that someone else had gotten into the picture."

What? Someone else? An “Invo,” perhaps, wearing some kind of breathing apparatus?

In 1964, and again in 1966, Yellowstone National Park was haunted by mysterious humming sounds. Tourists taking photographs of Old Faithful found large circular objects in their developed prints, which had not been visible when the pictures were taken.

The manifestations of the UFO phenomenon are filled with baffling contradictions. Amateur photographers have frequently been puzzled when their UFO pictures turned out to be very different from their visual impression when they snapped the shutter. Distinct cube-like objects hovering close to the ground have come out as very indistinct diaphanous blobs in the darkroom. In a great many cases, objects clearly seen by entire groups of witnesses have failed to appear on film at all!

“I can’t understand it! We should have gotten something,” Patrolman Paul Carter of Colby, Kansas, complained in August 1972. He had tried to photograph a brilliantly illuminated saucer-shaped object that was hovering about 150 feet above a trailer home near Gem, KS. It was making beeping sounds like Morse code transmission, and a dog in the area had its head to the ground, trying to cover its ears. Carter attempted to photograph it with an Instamatic camera. Another witness used a Polaroid and did get a smear-like image that “could be anything.”

Some cameras fail to function altogether when a UFO is present, then work perfectly after the object has left. Sites where UFOs have landed often prove to be unphotographable for days afterwards. The film just comes out completely blank!

When a team of professional television cameramen visited West Virginia in 1967, they saw a number of UFOs but were plagued by sudden equipment malfunctions. They did manage to take a few feet of movie film, however, but when they got it back to New York, the footage was “accidentally ruined” in a professional developing lab.

Good, sharply defined UFO photographs are so rare that most investigators are very suspicious when a witness produces a distinct picture. Even so, the photographic evidence accumulated over the past 25 years indicates that the stoic mechanical eye of the camera is able to see and register things that are

invisible to limited human vision.

It is now a well-established fact that some UFOs radiate powerful rays in the ultraviolet and infrared range. A logical starting point for laboratory experimentation would be a relatively inexpensive series of tests, photographing various metals and plastics bathed in these rays in an attempt to duplicate the effects produced by amateur photographers in the field. Some work has been conducted along these lines by government scientists, and especially by researchers in the Soviet Union. We now know, for example, that very low frequency (VLF) radiowaves produce the same medical effects on test animals as do UFOs.

Unfortunately, the few American scientists who have been attracted to the subject of flying saucers have been sidetracked by the quest for proof of extraterrestrial visitations. On the other hand, the controversial UFO contactees – who now number in the thousands in the United States alone – have been talking about invisible UFOs for years.

On April 24, 1964, a young farmer named Gary Wilcox allegedly encountered a grounded UFO in a field in broad daylight. Two small men in silvery suits were apparently collecting soil samples outside the objects, and they were startled that Wilcox could see them at all. According to Wilcox's story, they told him they and their craft were normally invisible at distances of beyond 190 feet in the daytime. At night, however, their saucers glowed in the dark and were easier to spot. (Mr. Wilcox was later carefully investigated by Dr. Berthold Schwarz, a prominent psychiatrist, who found no trace of hoax in his story.)

It is true that there are many reports in which the witnesses claimed the objects did not fly off, but simply disappeared into thin air after lifting several feet off the ground. We might speculate about this "focusing effect." Objects that slip out of focus to the human eye may remain at least partially in focus to a camera lens at greater distances.

Contactees who claim to have been taken aboard flying saucers – and there are many of them – often report that while the exterior of the object appeared solid and windowless, once they were inside, they found the walls were transparent and they had a clear view of the surrounding countryside. One man in Texas, Carroll Watts, allegedly had an encounter with a grounded UFO in 1967. A

bodiless voice invited him aboard and, among other things, told him that UFOs were based all over this planet, could not be detected, and possessed instruments that could tell them how many people were in a given building, and their ages. In some respects, Mr. Watts' story was reminiscent of the biblical account of Zachariah (Zachariah, 5-6), the prophet who described seeing a "flying roll." Zachariah was told by "a messenger" that these flying rolls were "the curse that goeth forth over the face of the whole Earth," and could even penetrate into homes to spy on the occupants.

Thanks to the diligent efforts of a handful of hard-working researchers, we now know that UFOs have been seen in our skies since the dawn of mankind. So they are not really "alien" but are, instead, a permanent feature of our environment. While the behavior of the UFO occupants is often mischievous, even backward (the late Ivan Sanderson, a zoologist, observed that they seemed to have the mentalities of 5-yr. old children), the overall source of the phenomenon seems to be extraordinarily complex. If UFOs are normally invisible, then they could be everywhere at once. But what purpose do they serve? Are they keeping close tabs on all of us, generation after generation, century after century? This seems to be the case.

To understand this phenomenon, we must discard all our preconceived ideas and come to grips with the hard facts of the empirical evidence. Our 20th Century technology has now given us the tools necessary for fruitful investigation. Having now identified the problem, we can examine its many bewildering aspects and search for the cause… Two of our tools, radar and photography, have proved to be unreliable. Radar can be deceived electronically. And the phenomenon seems able to manipulate cameras and film in ways that seem almost magical. Perhaps this is why the USAF stopped taking radar reports and UFO photographs seriously several years ago.

Among our other tools is the infrared detector – a simple device that can be built by any teenager for a few dollars. They consist of a photoelectric cell mounted behind an infrared filter. The Army's famous "sniper scope" is similar to this kind of device. NASA and the CIA have orbiting satellites containing highly sophisticated infrared detectors… Another device is the ultrasonic microphone, though this really cannot be used by amateurs. It is capable of picking up sounds radiated above the range of human hearing. The National Bureau of Standards has experimented with them. In 1965-66, the

NBS mounted such instruments along the East coast, facing the notorious "Bermuda Triangle" where so many ships and planes have vanished mysteriously. They picked up some odd "whispering sounds" of unknown origin.

The original biblical word sheol meant "invisible world," but was translated into "hell" and given an entirely new meaning. Obviously, the ancients had knowledge of the invisible phenomenon that surrounds us, and all of the early cults and magical societies based their lore upon that knowledge. But the concept of invisibility is hard for us to grasp, although there have been rumors of secret experiments with invisibility for years. And during the 1933 Chicago Exposition, a mysterious "Professor Tompkins" proudly demonstrated an invisibility device. He would have a member of the audience stand on a small platform while he manipulated switches and dials. The volunteer would then slowly fade away. No one seems to know what happened to the professor and his device after the fair closed.

A man named Carlos Allende has kept ufologists in a lather for years with his claim of knowing all about a WWII experiment where government scientists tried to make a Liberty ship invisible. His story has never been corroborated in any way. Allende's story was taken very seriously by the Office of Naval Research in the 1950s, and a Navy subcontractor, the Varo Corporation of Garland, TX, went to the trouble and expense of reprinting a UFO book that had been annotated by Mr. Allende. At that time, Varo was involved in making infrared devices (such as sniper scopes). Coincidentally, Garland, TX was very much in the news in 1973, when a peculiar fungus appeared on a lawn there. It grew, even bled, and defied efforts to kill it. The press labeled it "The Blob."

Invisible UFOs are just as possible as interplanetary UFOs. There is, in fact, far more evidence to support their invisibility than there is to support their extraterrestrial origin. But imagine the chaos that would result if the existence of these invisible legions could be verified? Even if the government confirmed it years ago, would they dare release such information to the public?

The answer to that question was contained in a frustrating statement issued by the RAF in April 1955, and widely published in the British press on April 24th. An RAF spokesman told reporters that the official British UFO investigation, begun in 1950, was "completed" and that the mystery had been

solved. However, he said, the solution could not be released to the public, because it involved certain top military secrets and would create even more controversy. Soon afterwards, RAF Air Marshall Lord Dowding gave a public lecture in which he stated that UFOs and their occupants apparently had the power of invisibility and were able to walk among us freely and unnoticed. There was very little official comment after that, until Sir Victor Goddard gave his speech in London in 1969.

Since 1949, the USAF has steadfastly adhered to the official line that flying saucers are not extraterrestrial spaceships and do not represent a "superior intelligence with an advanced technology." The air force line has consistently been that UFOs are swamp gas, conventional craft, hoaxes, or illusions. Obviously, the RAF and USAF had independently put everything together and come up with an answer that they knew would be unacceptable to the public, and, particularly, the hardcore flying saucer enthusiasts. That answer could be more unbelievable, and more frightening, than the UFO mystery itself.

CHAPTER 15

UFOS AND THE MYSTERIOUS WAVE OF WORLDWIDE KIDNAPPINGS – SAGA MAGAZINE, DEC. 1970

Every time there is a flying saucer "flap," people by the hundreds – particularly youngsters – literally vanish from the face of the earth. From remote northern Eskimo villages to population-packed Japanese cities, the reports flood in of their sudden disappearances. And, just as strangely, some of them re-appear weeks and months later, thousands of miles from home – not knowing their own names or where they've been!

Early in Dec. 1969, children began to disappear in the city of Vila Velha, Brazil, and what started as a minor mystery soon exploded into a frightening kidnapping epidemic. Within a few weeks, scores of youngsters, all between the ages of 9 and 15, and all from very poor families (which eliminated ransom as a motive) vanished without a trace. Police in the state of Espirito Santo began a massive search for a sinister kidnapping ring. But they had no leads. The disappearances seemed random, were not ordinary "runaways," and none of the children knew each other or went to the same school.

Then, in Feb. 1970, four of the missing youngsters reappeared separately. Two were found stumbling about the streets blindly, suffering from amnesia.

Although the other two were able to remember who they were and fragments of what happened, their stories were as bizarre as a science fiction tale. They each had been stopped on the street, they said, and were offered a ride in a large American-style limousine (a hard-to-resist treat for a poor Brazilian youth). Once in the car, each was given a cigarette, which was apparently drugged, for they then lapsed into unconsciousness. One returnee recalled that he awoke in a small hut, tied hand and foot, and that a stranger finally entered, freed him, and told him how to find the nearest police station. An 11-yr. old girl named Vani said her kidnapper was a woman named "Laura." Laura fed her sweets and then took her to a field where an airplane was waiting. But when Vani began to scream and fuss, Laura gave her some money and returned her to her village. Most of the victims were boys, although a few girls were included.

Once the kidnapping wave began to receive publicity, several youths who had heard of it had narrow escapes, fleeing the big cars and their mysterious occupants when they were offered lifts. Brazilian correspondent Eduardo Keffel reported in the German magazine Die Bunte Illustrierte (March 24, 1970) that the police were speculating that a slavery ring was operating in the area. But the possibility exists that saucer men may have been the culprits.

Actually, large numbers of children have been disappearing for centuries all over the world, and most of these cases have remained unsolved. Some have been handed down as rumor and myth; others have been heavily documented and repeated in books dealing with unusual events. The celebrated Pied Piper of Hamelin, Germany, is more than just a charming children's story. A stranger actually did appear in Hamelin in the Middle ages, and he did lure 150 children away, never to be seen again. The event is still celebrated in Hamelin each year with a festival.

One of the first colonies of the New World, the Roanoke Island colony, established in 1585 off the coast of what is now North Carolina, disappeared magically. Virginia Dare, the first child of European descent born on this continent, was among the missing. The local Indians were not hostile, and were as baffled by the colony's disappearance as the explorers who searched for it. Historians have been arguing the fate of Miss Dare and her compatriots ever since.

Another village, a remote Eskimo settlement in northern Canada, lost its entire population in Aug. 1930. Supposedly the village was found abandoned. Its 30 inhabitants had left their food, clothing, kayaks, rifles, and dogs. Since no Eskimo is likely to travel very far without his precious rifle (or his dog), everyone was baffled. Strangest of all, a grave on the edge of the village had supposedly been opened and the body taken. Grave robbing is an unspeakable crime among Eskimos, and it is unlikely that they dug up the body and fled the village, leaving behind their weapons, tools, food, and dogs. A purported investigation failed to yield any clues (and the Royal Canadian Mounted Police claims to have no record of the incident).

More recently, in the summer of 1967, another very peculiar report came out of the Canadian north, from an Indian village accessible only by air. This case came to the attention of a leading Canadian investigator named Brian cannon. He pieced it together from the stories told by bush pilots and hunters.

According to cannon, about 40 Indian schoolchildren suddenly vanished from the village one weekend. Forty-eight hours later, they all reappeared unharmed, bubbling over with an amazing story. They had been taken, they said, by a group of very small men who subjected them to various examinations but treated them very well. When they were released, each child was given a small white cube that was sweet, but did not melt like sugar.

Since the village is so remote, there has never been an on-the-spot investigation by Mr. Cannon or other competent researchers. The case must remain pure hearsay, but it is not unique. The fairy tales of Ireland and northern Scandinavia contain similar accounts: little people – fairies and leprechauns – who are supposed to have frequently indulged in kidnapping. Even today, there are periodic epidemics of vanishing children.

One district in Sweden has had so many "little people" reports that for centuries, it's officially been known as "Elfland." One of the most celebrated cases of occult kidnapping took place there in 1668, at the peak of the worldwide witch craze. One hundred children in the villages of Mohra and Elfdale were allegedly lured into the night to participate in strange rites. A legal trial was later held, so there are extensive records of the whole affair. The judges were impressed by the fact that all of the 100 victims gave identical details. Fifteen of the children were later executed, While 60 others were sentenced to be whipped, once a week, for a year. Their stories involved mental telepathy, astral projection, strange entities that possessed the power of flight, and amnesia. All of these things are familiar ingredients in modern flying saucer stories.

In reviewing this bizarre case, the British parapsychologist Peter Robson recently commented, "Suppose (there was) a black magician possessing immense powers – powers that included the ability to set up some form of telepathic communication with the untroubled mind of a sleeping child. And not just one child, but 100… Subconsciously, the children receive an order to go to a certain place at a certain time. The next day, the children rendezvous at the gravel pit near the crossroads. The magician appears and leads them like a kind of satanic Pied Piper. Afterwards, the children are ordered to forget the place and the way to it; their memory of the journey is hypnotically supplanted by a surrealist dream."

In modern flying saucer stories, we find that the unknown objects frequently

appeared over, or landed in, gravel pits near crossroads. Innumerable UFO witnesses have purportedly received telepathic messages and also have suffered from amnesia. Modern psychiatrists and psychologists investigating UFO contact stories have concluded that the witnesses had actually experienced "a surrealist dream," and that their memories of what actually took place were replaced by false memories of visits to other worlds. This process is known as "confabulation," and may be a vital key to the whole flying saucer mystery.

In other words, just as the children of 1668 remembered incredible (if not altogether impossible) meetings with a "black magician" or the devil, modern flying saucer contactees may be remembering only what they have been programmed to remember.

Some witnesses are simply programmed to forget a specific period of time altogether. This type of amnesia is prevalent in the early fairy and witchcraft lore and, now, in the present-day UFO reports. In 1959, Pfc. Gerry Irwin, a Nike missile technician, was the subject of an intensive investigation by the Aerial Phenomena Research Organization (APRO). While driving near Cedar City, Utah, on Feb. 28, 1959, Irwin saw what appeared to be an airliner attempting a forced landing nearby. He stopped his car and started out on foot for the site of the "crash." The next thing he knew, he was in a hospital in Cedar City, minus his jacket.

A few weeks later, Irwin felt a compelling urge to revisit the same area. He went AWOL from his post at Ft. Bliss, TX, and made his way back to the spot where he thought the object had crashed. There he found his jacket with a pencil through the buttonhole. A piece of paper was wrapped around the pencil. Without knowing why, Irwin burned the paper without even reading it. It was only after the paper was reduced to ashes that he came out of the "trance" that had drawn him to the spot. He turned himself over to the local sheriff immediately. For several weeks after, Private Irwin was in and out of hospitals. Psychiatrists could find nothing wrong with him. Then, on Aug. 1, 1959, he went AWOL again. It was as if he had vanished into thin air, for he hasn't been heard from since.

Movie and soap opera plots to the contrary, a simple blow on the head rarely induces amnesia. The traditional medical explanation for amnesia is that it is caused by an overwhelming emotional trauma. A man murders his wife in a fit

of rage, and then his mind represses his entire memory of the act. A child sees his beloved dog run over by a car, and erases the painful memory by forgetting that entire period of his childhood. Psychiatrists can spot this form of amnesia and cope with it. But most of the amnesia cases apparently induced by paranormal happenings, such as encounters with "fairies" or flying saucers, are not so easily diagnosed and dealt with. And there are many other cases of amnesia that are not so easily explained. The nature of the trauma is never determined.

Every July, there is a sudden rash of amnesia cases in the national press; and July is also a peak month for UFO sightings. People mysteriously turn up in all parts of the world, sometimes knowing who they are, but baffled that they are suddenly so far from home. A Londoner inexplicably finds himself in South Africa; a girl from Cleveland awakes to discover she is in Australia; an unemployed Swedish milkman suddenly finds himself on a golf course of a remote resort island for the very rich. They become the subjects of amusing little "human interest" stories in the July newspapers. But what really happens to such people? Who, or what, suddenly transports them thousands of miles from home without their conscious knowledge? Often they are also displaced in time, unable to account for or remember the past six months or two years.

Others vanish without reason and turn up weeks or months later, many miles from home, unable to remember even their names. Did they suffer blows to the head, or did something far more complicated and mysterious happen to them?

A woman in Allentown, PA soberly related this strange story… She and her husband have a small summer cottage in the Pocono Mountains, a 30-minute drive from their home. One Saturday morning in July 1966, the young couple got in their car and started out for the cottage. As they drove along the Pennsylvania Turnpike, which seemed strangely devoid of traffic that day, they saw a large circular object in the sky ahead of them. It looked as if it was going to land directly on the turnpike. Her husband, mildly alarmed, pulled over to the edge of the road and stopped. They watched as the object, a shiny metallic thing with large black spots or windows, flew very low over their car. Then, suddenly, it was gone. Her husband started the car again and they drove on to their cottage. It was not until after they arrived that they looked at their watches. It was 1:30 a.m. They had started out at 9:30 a.m. For some reason neither of them can explain, it took them four hours for a trip that normally takes 30 minutes!

On a warm night early in Aug. 1966, a Philadelphia policeman named Chester Archey, Jr., set out on a routine patrol in North Philadelphia. He drove instead through that door into the unknown… Archey, a veteran with 15 years on the force, suddenly found himself in Pennsauken, NJ, where he became involved in a minor accident while he was driving around in confusion. “I don’t have any idea how I got there,” Archey protested at a police hearing later. “I don’t even know where Pennsauken is!”

According to the newspaper Diario de Cordoba, a well-known Argentine businessman suffered a strange distortion of time and space in 1959. He reportedly got into his car one morning in the city of Bahia Blanca, Argentina, and started to drive away from his hotel, when a strange cloud seemed to envelope his vehicle. The next he knew, he was standing alone on a deserted spot in the countryside. He hailed a passing truck and asked the driver to take him to Bahia Blanca. Looking at him as though he was some kind of maniac, the driver explained that they were in Salta. Bahia Blanca was over 1000 kilometers away! He drove the befuddled businessman to the nearest police station, and they called the police in Bahia Blanca, who later called back and confirmed that the businessman’s car was still outside the hotel with its motor running. Strangest of all, only a few minutes had elapsed from the time the man had first climbed into the car. Yet he had somehow been transported about 600 miles.

An almost identical incident occurred outside Bahia Blanca in May 1968, when Dr. Gerardo Vidal and his wife said their auto was caught up in a dense fog and they lost consciousness. They came to on a strange road. Their watches had stopped, and the surface of their car was badly scorched. They soon learned that 48 hours had passed, and they were now in Mexico, many thousands of miles north of Bahia Blanca.

How can cars and people be shifted almost instantaneously from place to place? We have only a few slender clues. On March 4, 1964, a leading Japanese newspaper, Mainichi, carried an unbelievable story about an automobile disappearing from view on a crowded highway. The witnesses were three officials of the Fuji Bank. They reported that they saw a black car ahead of theirs going in the same direction. Aside from the driver, they saw an elderly man in the back seat reading a newspaper. “Suddenly a puff of something gaseous, like white smoke or vapor, gushed out from somewhere

around the black car, and when this cloud dispersed (in a matter of not more than five seconds) the black car had vanished," the newspaper account said.

The trio of witnesses was shaken by the car's disappearance and reported it to the police. And, thus, another inexplicable oddity was added to already bulging files. Could the car in Japan have been taken by the same unknown force that transported the Argentinean businessman 1000 kilometers? Could that force have been working during the Korean War, when British Wing Commander J. Baldwin flew into a cloud and never came out again?

Is it the same kind of cloud that literally devoured an entire British regiment near Sulva Bay, Turkey, in 1915? A group of men later signed affidavits that they had watched the One-Fourth Norfolk Regiment march into a peculiar brown cloud that hugged the ground in their path, and that none of them reappeared on the other side. After a few moments, the witnesses said, the cloud rose and flew away, joining a group of similar clouds, which then sailed off against the wind. No one from that regiment was ever seen again! Eight hundred men missing – or taken – from the face of the earth!

People also disappear from ships. In June and July of 1969, five crewless ships were found in the Atlantic, in that section that has become known as the "Bermuda Triangle." All the ships were in good condition, and there wasn't a clue explaining why their crews had abandoned them so suddenly. Since the 1840s, over 1000 sailors have been lost in the Bermuda Triangle area. There was a wave of such cases in the 1920s. Three American ships vanished in the Triangle in a single week in June 1921, with over a dozen ships listed as missing in that month alone.

Each new wave of disappearances creates a brief sensation and is then quickly forgotten. No one ever manages to find out what happened to these people. In 1912, five unrelated men inexplicably disappeared one week in Buffalo, NY. Montreal, Canada had a wave of missing persons in July 1883, and again in 1892.

Teenage children, as already noted, disappear more frequently than any other age group. In Aug. 1869, 13 children vanished in Cork, Ireland. There was no sign of kidnapping or foul play. That same month, there was a wave of disappearing children in Brussels, Belgium. Another group of youngsters vanished in Belfast, Ireland, in August, 1895. And, again, in August 1920, eight

girls, all under 12 years of age, disappeared forever in Belfast.

The latter part of the nineteenth century produced several classic disappearances. On Thursday, Sept. 23, 1880, a farmer named David Lang took a few steps into an open field near Gallatin, TN, and instantly vanished in front of several witnesses, including a judge. Where did he go? A long and thorough search of the field produced nothing. Five years later, on Thursday, April 23, 1885, another farmer named Isaac Martin walked into a field near Salem, VA, and, like David Lang, dissolved into nothingness.

Such sudden, inexplicable disappearances still occur. In the summer of 1969, a 7-yr. old boy named Dennis Martin was whisked away in the Great Smoky Mountains National Park in Tennessee. One second he was walking along with his father and other relatives, and the next he was gone. Every stone and crevice was searched. A massive hunt was launched, with more than 1,400 people looking everywhere. The boy was never found.

People have vanished from their own backyards while mowing the lawn. Entire families have disappeared leaving behind all their belongings. Bruce Burkan, 19, melted away wearing nothing but a bathing suit. On Aug. 22, 1967, Burkan left his girlfriend on the beach at Asbury Park, NJ and went to put a coin in a parking meter. After waiting for his return for quite a while, his girlfriend checked the car and found it locked.

Two months later, long after his family had given him up for dead, Bruce Burkan found himself in a bus terminal in Newark, dressed in a cheap, ill-fitting suit, with seven cents in his pocket. He could not remember anything of those missing eight weeks. The date of the return of his memory was Oct. 24th. Students of paranormal happenings have long been puzzled by the fact that so many of these things seem to occur on the 24th of the month.

On Aug. 15, 1967, seven days before Burkan's still-unexplained disappearance, a 37-yr. old research scientist named Paul T. MacGregor left his office at the Polaroid Corporation in Boston, Ma and started out for Camp Kirby to join his vacationing family. He never got there. One month later, he walked into a police station in Buffalo, NY and told them he didn't know who he was. His identity was traced through the labels in his clothes and the inscription on his wedding ring. Doctors at Meyer Memorial Hospital in Buffalo examined him, and said they were convinced that he was suffering

from amnesia. What occurred on that Massachusetts highway that night that caused his mind to shut off the past?

Airplanes are also lost at an average of 50 a year. The Bermuda Triangle has claimed over 40 aircraft in the past 20 years. Of course, many lost planes are discovered years later in remote areas. But many other disappear forever, and extensive searches by land, sea, and air fail to uncover any debris, oil slicks, or other traces.

Blimps and dirigibles have also been victims of this plague. On Dec. 21, 1923, the French dirigible, Dixmunde, became the subject of a massive and fruitless search, after vanishing somewhere over the Mediterranean, taking 52 passengers and crew with it. And two young naval officers named Cody and Adams disappeared inexplicably from a blimp, the L-8, in California in 1942. The lumbering blimp came down in the streets of Daly City, a San Francisco suburb, and there was no clue as to the fate of her two-man crew. Parachutes, life jackets, and other equipment were all intact.

Another celebrated case took place on July 24, 1924, when Lt. W.T. Day and Pilot Officer D.R. Stewart took off in a single-engine biplane for a routine patrol over the Arabian Desert. When they failed to return, a search party went looking for their plane. It was found the next day, parked on the desert, completely intact, and in excellent working order. There was gasoline in the tank, and no sign of violence. The footprints of the two men were clearly visible in the sand. They had taken a few steps away from the plane…and then the footprints stopped.

An Italian correspondent, Alberto Fenoglio, reported a similar disappearance in the Soviet Union in 1961. A small mail plane was missing, but was quickly located in perfect condition near the remote town of Tobolsk, Siberia. "Everything on board – engine, radio, mailbags, etc. – was in perfect order," Fenoglio stated. "The tank contained fuel for two hours of flight. The four passengers had vanished without a trace. At a distance of about 300 feet from the aircraft there was a huge, clearly defined circle, on which the grass was scorched, and the earth depressed."

Naturally, these mysteries have attracted the flying saucer researchers, and two researchers apparently joined the missing, voluntarily, on Nov. 11, 1953. Wilbur J. Wilkinson held a responsible position with the Hoffman Radio Corp.

in Los Angeles. According to his wife, “he had tape recordings of conversations with men from other planets, who landed here in saucers.” The den in his home was lined with UFO photographs, weird symbols, and formulations supposedly passed along by “little men” from the planet “Maser” (whose inhabitants were preparing to invade Earth). Wilkinson’s partner, Karl Hunrath, claimed to have information about landed saucers, and talked his friend into renting an airplane so they could try to find them. They took off from the Gardena, CA airport with a three-hour supply of gasoline. That was the last anyone saw of them. A widespread search failed to turn up either the plane or the two men.

At least one eyewitness claims to have seen a UFO seize a plane in mid-air and carry it off. In letters sent to both the Civil Aeronautics Board and the FBI, Eugene Metcalfe of Paris, IL, avowed that on Wed., March 9, 1955, he was watching a jet-fighter shoot across the sky when, suddenly, a gigantic object “shaped like a cow bell” descended over it. This object, Metcalfe wrote, literally swallowed up the fast-moving jet “as easy as a hawk would a chicken’ and then disappeared upwards with its prey. A jet-fighter and its pilot were reported missing in the region that very day!

In spite of his detailed report on the incident, Metcalfe was never questioned further by the authorities. He later signed notarized affidavits swearing to the truth of his report.

Not only have planes and ships disappeared, but there are also two recorded cases in which entire railroad trains disappeared between stations. And a ferryboat carrying 170 people vanished in Japan’s Inland Sea on Jan. 26, 1958. There was no debris. No hats, newspapers, or lifejackets were floating in the water afterwards. It just simply “went.”

Submarines, too, have shown a tendency to vanish in cycles. In 1939, before WWII began, four subs vanished in four months. They belonged to Japan, the U.S., Great Britain, and France. During the week of Jan. 21, 1968, both a French and an Israeli submarine vanished in the placid Mediterranean. Search parties reported unidentified flying objects in the area, and one group of would-be rescuers detected a metal object and thought they had found one of the missing craft. But the object scooted away and was never explained. Since then, four more subs belonging to the U.S., England, and France have disappeared. The most recent, the French Eurydice, was swallowed up last

March 4th in the Mediterranean. Somebody seems to be collecting submarines.

Much of this strains our credibility, yet these are documented cases from police files, military records, reliable newspapers, and valid historical accounts. These things have happened – and are continuing to happen – almost entirely unnoticed. New reports flood in constantly.

Researcher Joan Whritenour investigated a fascinating case in 1969. A young enlisted man in the U.S. Air force reported that he was walking alone along a beach near his base in the deep South one evening, when he saw a strange luminous object offshore. The glowing thing bobbed and weaved in the classic "falling leaf motion" described by many UFO witnesses. As it drew closer to the airman, he was overcome with a tingling sensation and lapsed into unconsciousness. When he came to, he was still on the beach, but something odd had happened. All the metal had been stripped from his uniform – the insignia, metal buttons, and belt buckle. And the few dollars he'd had with him were gone. The only things left in his pockets were a few coins – exactly seven cents (like Bruce Burkan).

Everything points to one grisly conclusion: our planes, ships, automobiles, and people are being removed by a force whose origins and motivations are totally unknown to us. Dogs and animals also seem to be disappearing at an alarming rate in UFO "flap" areas. Statistically, these events tend to cluster around the 10th and 24th of the month, year after year, with a disproportionate amount of activity on Wednesdays. These patterns indicate that some form of intelligence is behind it all.

While all this has been going on, our government has been looking the other way, and comparatively small groups of ET believers have been fooling themselves with pap about the noble "Brothers from outer space." These buffs naively speculate, "Well, if they're smart enough to build flying saucers, then they're obviously smart enough to have outgrown war and hostility."

But hostility does not always manifest itself in the form of a direct poke in the nose. You can poison the soup instead or, if you have the capability, you might even poison the human mind itself.

On Wed., Jan. 6, 1974, Richard Lee Smith, a motorist in Florida, allegedly collided with a 7-foot monster, which limped away but was seen later by another motorist on U.S. Route 27. Patrolman Robert Holmeyer of the Hialeah

Garden police also glimpsed the critter.

While our astronauts collect rocks, do our UFOs collect ears?

CHAPTER 16

MYSTERIOUS GAS ATTACKS – SAGA MAGAZINE, JULY 1968

At 9:15 p.m. on the evening of Tuesday, July 4, 1967, Thomas Valley was sitting on his front porch in Youngstown, Ohio, when he suddenly found it hard to breathe. His neighbors also found their eyes watering, and their lungs bursting, as they ran indoors to reach for their phones. A few blocks away, patrons in Lee and Eddie's Lounge stumbled frantically into the street and collapsed as Lt. Howard Moore and Patrolmen Thomas E. Kelty and Geno DiFabio cruised along Market Street. They saw what appeared to be a large cloud of faintly luminous smoke rolling along the ground.

"We pulled into the lot to check if a fire had started," Lt. Moore said later. "When I got out of the patrol car, I began to choke, got dizzy, and my eyes watered."

The Youngstown Fire Department rushed oxygen equipment to the area. "It was like a phantom cloud that made your eyes water and made you feel weak," Battalion Chief Glenn Schultz declared. Both the firemen and the police searched for the source of the gas, but could find nothing. The mysterious cloud drifted away eastward.

That same night, holiday celebrants on Cape Cod, hundreds of miles east of Youngstown, were watching strange lights dancing in the darkened skies as a massive power failure hit a large part of New England. There were reported UFO landings in Connecticut and on Long Island, NY later that same night. In the two weeks following the strange "gas attack," hundreds of citizens in the Youngstown area reported low-flying circular objects and strange lights. Some witnesses claimed the objects gave off a smell "like burning tar."

Something about the UFO mystery literally stinks. Most often, it smells like rotten eggs, according to the many witnesses who have reported unseemly odors in the vicinity of hovering or grounded unidentified flying objects. Chemists interpret "the smell of rotten eggs" to mean the presence of hydrogen sulfide, a volatile combination of hydrogen and sulfur that was known to the ancients as "brimstone." But other ugly smells and enigmatic clouds of

unidentifiable gas have also been associated with the "flying saucers."

The people in Youngstown will be startled to learn that a similar "attack" was recorded on Aug. 13, 1954, in far-off Singapore. An area covering two square miles around the Chiangi Airport was affected, and everyone indoors and out was choking and crying copious tears for several hours that day. Authorities could never pinpoint the source. Normal air pollution did not seem to be the answer.

Just as assorted authorities have been obliged to explain away the thousands of UFO reports during the past two decades, so have they been forced to come up with some wild theories for the hundreds of "gas attacks" that have taken place during the same period. Most of these incidents have rated only a few lines in the back pages of your hometown newspaper if, indeed, they were mentioned at all. But they have been on the increase since the resurgence of UFO activity in 1964, and are now occurring almost weekly somewhere in the world.

In May 1967, a large section of Naples, Italy, had to be evacuated because of an overpowering toxic gas, which no one could identify. Its source was never determined. In June 1967, thousands of residents in towns along the southern shore of Long Island, NY were awakened in the middle of the night by the potent odor of rotten eggs, which was apparently rolling in from the Atlantic Ocean. Authorities tried to blame New York City's smokestacks, but they failed to explain how Manhattan's polluted air could drift out over the Atlantic and then drift back.

On Jan. 19, 1968, everyone in Lower Manhattan held their noses as acrid, eye-smarting fumes poured over New York and Brooklyn, starting around 8 p.m. New Jersey's oil refineries took the rap for that one. Unfortunately, the New Jersey smells not only had to fight the ocean breezes, but they also had to build up after peak working hours. Fifteen large luminous objects had been reported just outside Manhattan in the vicinity of Jones Beach the week before, and the phones at neighboring Nassau Shores had been out of action from 6:30 to 8 p.m. on Jan. 13th (the hours when the objects were reportedly active in the area). Between the 13th and the 19th, there were extensive local power failures in the Bronx, Queens, and on Long Island – another frequent symptom of UFO activity. Could all these things have been mere coincidences? Until we can prove otherwise, we will have to record them as such.

Speaking of coincidences, on Jan. 9, 1968, the town of Somerville, NJ had to be evacuated because of gas fumes. Two days later, on Jan. 11th, the 2,400 residents of little Archbold, Ohio had to flee their town. Something smelled there, too. The remarkable thing is that apparently both of these incidents were caused by the same thing. We were told the underground gasoline storage tanks at local filling stations had ruptured and leaked into the sewer systems. It is odd that two steel and concrete tanks, in two widely separated towns, should rupture within two days of each other, and that the gasoline would not only find its way into the sewers, but also would linger long enough to create an air-quality crisis in both towns.

Equally interesting, and even more coincidental, is the recent wave of accidents involving trucks and trains carrying poisonous gasses. There have been six such accidents since Dec. 1967 and, in each case, large areas had to be evacuated until the gas dispersed. It would be unreasonable to blame these apparently random accidents on "flying saucers," even though the authorities have not been able to give us a good acceptable explanation for them.

The point remains: In nearly every one of these cases, the areas had to be evacuated, sometimes for days.

Back in 1963-65, a section of Roger Mills County in Oklahoma had to be evacuated because an evil-smelling "something" had settled there, and was systematically killing off livestock and making all of the inhabitants ill. Forty farms were affected by something that smelled like rotten eggs. Hydrogen sulfide really gets around... Roger Mills County is on the eastern tip of the state, far removed from any industrial complex – and a helluva long way from New Jersey. The total population of the county is only 5,000.

This "attack" began in Jan. 1963 on a farm owned by the Daniel Allen family. According to Mr. Allen, they suffered "terrible odors that made us nauseated and ill with suffocating, coughing, diarrhea, and burning of our flesh to a deep red." The Allen home, a concrete-block ranch house built in 1955, started to crack and crumble. Within weeks, the invisible "stuff" was peeling and blistering the paint and plaster, and disintegrating curtains and clothing.

"Dishes were eaten until they looked like mice had chewed them around the edges," Mrs. Allen later told reporters Jack Porter and Tex Lowell. "Black holes were eaten into silver tableware, stainless steel articles, and cooking

utensils."

While eating supper on the night of March 12, 1963, both Mr. and Mrs. Allen suddenly fainted. As soon as they recovered they fled, abandoning their furniture, clothing, and housewares. They moved twice again to homes northeast of their original spread, but the curious plague followed them. Dr. Frank Buster, the county health authority, warned them to move further away. Dr. Philip Devanney of Sayre, OK told them, "You only have hours to live if you don't get out of what's poisoning you."

The evil "stuff" spread to the Woodrow Myers farm three and a half miles south of the Allen home. The Myers' cattle sickened, and their three small children turned frail and pale, began to lose their teeth, and suffered fits of nausea, burning skin, dysentery, and coughing. Even the mice, birds, and insects seemed to vacate the county. Forty farmers in the area appealed to Oklahoma Governor Henry Bellmon. The U.S. Dept. of Health, Education, and Welfare joined the investigation. They concluded that "an air pollution problem does not exist in the vicinity."

The sheriff of nearby Hutchinson County, Hugh Anderson, was pressured into issuing a quarantine preventing any resident of Roger Mills County from entering Hutchinson County "until such time as the 'stuff" is identified."

Could the strange gas that took over Roger Mills County be related in any way to the UFO mystery? Oklahoma has a long and complicated history of UFO sightings going all the way back to the late 1800s. A sizable "flap" took place there in 1909-10. Just across the border from Roger Mills County, in Texas, there has been a wild rash of sightings and alleged "contacts" throughout 1966-67.

In recent years, there have been many little-publicized poltergeist cases in which the witnesses claimed their homes reeked of the odor of rotten eggs. Objects such as ashtrays floated mysteriously around the rooms, doors opened and closed by themselves, and strange rappings occurred in the walls. Ufologists all over the world are now making a serious study of the age-old poltergeist phenomenon, searching for possible links to the UFO mystery itself. Many witnesses are convinced that invisible entities are on the prowl and, for want of a better term, they are now called "Smellies." These "Smellies" seem to be almost always accompanied by a potent whiff of hydrogen sulfide gas.

And many of the victims complain of headaches, fits of nausea, and other physical symptoms after receiving a "visit" from a "Smellie."

The link between the "Smellies" and the UFOs is tenuous at best. But it does seem that there are more poltergeist and "Smelly" cases in UFO flap areas than in sectors where UFO sightings are rare.

Harry Sturdevant, a night watchman in Trenton, NJ, reportedly observed a low-flying cigar-shaped object on the night of Oct. 2, 1956. "There was a smell like sulfur or brimstone," Sturdevant claimed, "but it was different. I don't know what it was, really, except it was very nauseating and made me very sick. I lost my sense of taste and smell; my throat would not swallow properly. My stomach felt worse than the time I was overcome with mustard gas while fighting in France in World War I. I collapsed in pain, and lay there on the ground for half an hour before I was able to drive."

The symptoms for hydrogen sulfide poisoning are "corrosive action on mouth, throat, and esophagus; causes severe pain in throat and stomach," according to the Merck Manual, a medical dictionary used by doctors. Headaches, loss of smell, weakness, reddening of the face, and coughing are among the other key symptoms. Obviously, the families in Oklahoma suffered all of these things but, in their case, something extra was apparently added. That something was so corrosive that it ate its way through chinaware and silver, and weakened concrete. And it caused the children in the afflicted area to lose their teeth. What was that "something extra?" Therein lies a bizarre scientific detective story, and an unexpected new controversy for the UFO-philes to haggle over.

Hydrogen sulfide is not a major air pollutant, although it is a routine waste product in oil refining processes. When London, England was buried in a thick, unnatural fog for four days, from Dec. 3-7, 1962, over 4,000 people were afflicted with severe respiratory ailments, and 106 died. Investigating authorities blamed an inversion layer which, they said, kept industrial wastes such as hydrogen sulfide boxed in. But there had never been such a severe incident before – or since. Reviewing the data published on this event, it appears that many of the victims of this "fog" suffered the same symptoms as the harassed farmers of Oklahoma. Since American authorities completely dismissed normal air pollution as a cause for the Oklahoma "attack," we are hard-pressed to relate the two. In view of more recent events, however, we cannot afford to overlook the possibility that the London "fog" may have been

somehow connected. In fact, our natural and unnatural air pollution problem may have direct relationship to the UFO phenomenon.

During Thanksgiving week of 1966, a heavy smog settled over the northeastern United States from Maine to Virginia. And during that week, there was an enormous UFO flap encompassing all of those states. The UFO activity seemed to concentrate particularly in New England and New Jersey. Responsible witnesses even reported mysterious objects over New York City. But, as with most of the UFO mystery, this seems coincidental and unimportant on the surface.

Two other apparently unrelated factors have been baffling serious ufologists. One is the repeated appearance of silicon substances at alleged UFO landing sites. Three puddles of silicon were found on a beach at Presque Isle, PA after a carload of people reported seeing a triangular-shaped object land there on July 31, 1966. The Air Force collected samples and claimed it was nothing but urine. Policemen on the site also collected samples, and had it analyzed on their own. It proved to be silicon, a plastic-like, non-metallic substance. A similar substance was found at the site of the Socorro, NM landing reported by policeman Lonnie Zamora in 1964. Silicon has been repeatedly found at many other such sites. The Air Force persists in mistakenly calling it "silica," which is common sand.

The other puzzling factor is the continuous UFO activity within the immediate vicinity of – of all things – fertilizer factories! Such factories deal with nitrates and phosphates. In one recent case near Syracuse, NY, a family began to suffer from poltergeist phenomena. A team of investigators headed by Prof. Gordon Evans and William Donovan, head of the Aerial Investigation and Research Corp. (AIR), discovered the witnesses' home was very close to a fertilizer factory. Trees in the vicinity had been cleanly knocked down in a row, indicating that something heavy and airborne had plowed through them.

Chemical factories in the Ohio River Valley have also been the sites of frequent low-level, hovering UFO activity in the past year, as have the large chemical factories in the vicinity of the Wanaque Reservoir in New Jersey. Early in my investigations in these areas, I searched for a common denominator – a factor that might be present in each case. Hydrogen sulfide proved not to be that factor, although some of these factories were spewing sulfides from their smokestacks. Some of the factories along the Ohio were employing silicons in

the manufacture of rubber, but silicon isn't present in every UFO case.

There is, however, one thing that all of these places have in common, and it provides a startling key to what may be really going on. The immediate and obvious implications are so complex and so "far out" that many readers will reject it. You must remember that what is being offered here is a mere summary of the extensive data that has been collected.

Before I can spell out that common factor in acceptable terms, I must discuss some other apparently unrelated mysteries. Then we'll try to add it all up.

Back in 1955, the late Gen. George C. Marshall allegedly made a most astonishing statement to the British ufologist, Dr. Rolf Alexander. "United States authorities have established the fact that flying saucers are manned by visitors from outer space," Marshall is supposed to have said. "And these visitors are trying to work out a method of breathing and staying alive in our atmosphere before landing and establishing contact."

In 1959, Gen. Nathan Twining, then Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, wrote to Vice Adm. R.N. Hillenkoetter and remarked that attempts had been made to communicate with the UFOs, but they had failed because of "physical reasons."

A number of the people who have reported encounters with the "invisible Smellies" have said that they heard the sound of gasping and heavy breathing during their experience. Several "silent contactees," who claim to have had face-to-face confrontations with the UFO occupants, have also reported that the entities seemed to have trouble breathing. Since none of these people can prove the validity of their stories, we are forced to accept them at face value. But this breathing problem is definitely a common factor in such reported encounters. Perhaps General Marshall was right. "Breathing and staying alive in our atmosphere" may be a serious problem for some of "them."

There seems to be a higher rate of "Smelly" activity and direct "contact" in the vicinity of chemical and fertilizer factories. Naturally this has been carefully checked to find out if the witnesses might not have smelled "normal" factory odors. But most of these people had lived in the area for years, and were convinced that the odors invading their homes had nothing to do with the output of the factories. Although much of our data is still admittedly fragmentary, and investigating and correlating these factors is a tremendous undertaking, we can

hazard a guess and say that it seems probable that some of the entities are able to "breathe more easily" in the immediate area of the factories. This would account for the apparent concentration of such stories around the plants.

Carrying this hypothesis a step further, we might suggest that the entities "take their own atmosphere along with them" when visiting places where there are no factories spewing gases into the air. Thus, Roger Mills County in Oklahoma was suffering a change of atmosphere. Toxic (to us) gasses were introduced into the wide-open spaces so that the UFOs and their mysterious occupants could exist there, and operate from some kind of hidden land base. Since the county has become "taboo" land, avoided by all the nearby inhabitants, the UFOs could operate with impunity.

In other cases, such as the Somerville, NJ and Archbold, OH incidents cited earlier, the towns were evacuated because of a gas that smelled like sewer gas (hydrogen sulfide again). Maybe the entities were able to perform some mysterious errand there, unharmed by the presence of troublesome humans.

This all makes a crazy, science-fictionish kind of sense, but even this may be a simplification of what is really going on. We still have to travel far before we can arrive at a real answer.

Throughout the year 1954, thousands of automobile windshields suddenly shattered or became strangely pitted. Maybe it happened to your own car. Newspapers from Canada to Florida busily reported this peculiar phenomenon, which actually began in 1952 and continued to the fall of 1954. It recurred in 1957. Police departments and investigating scientists were baffled. Plate-glass store windows were also affected, and hundreds of people in Toronto complained of a mysterious substance falling from the sky that burned their skins.

Whatever this stuff was, there was apparently a healthy (or unhealthy) rain of it throughout the United States. It had somewhat the same effect as the "stuff" that haunted Oklahoma a decade later, and ate holes in china.

In that strange summer of 1954, thousands of people reported UFOs in the skies over Rome, Italy. One of the witnesses was Mrs. Claire Booth Luce, then U.S. Ambassador to the Vatican. She, like hundreds of other people in Rome, was stricken with an odd malady that sapped her vitality and reduced her to a thin, pale shade of her former self. Eventually her bewildered doctors decided she

was suffering from lead poisoning, brought about by the lead content in the paint on the walls of her Rome apartment.

Hundreds of people around the little town of Barrie, Ontario were laid low by "lead poisoning" three years later, during a massive UFO flap there in 1957. They became weak, nauseous, mentally confused, and their doctors were unable to alleviate their illness. The odd ailments lasted for about two weeks. Some residents complained that their water (mostly from private wells), turned green during that period. (In July 1967, the tap water in Civitavecchia, Italy also turned a bright green. Authorities shut down the town's plumbing while they searched for the cause. If they found it, it was never revealed.)

Clouds of gas, foul odors, pitted windshields, fertilizer factories, mysterious maladies, and green water… Where is all this leading us, and what has it got to do with flying saucers? It is leading us to still another unexplained phenomenon, something well known to every UFO-phile. We call it "angel hair."

For centuries, there have been reports of this peculiar, cobweb-like material falling from the sky and melting away when touched. Ships at sea have been covered with it. Farmers have awakened in the morning to find their fields strewn with it. Many people have attempted to collect it and have it analyzed, but it always seems to dissolve, even in sealed bottles. In Nov. 1954, a Mrs. Dittmar of Marysville, OH reported seeing great quantities of the stuff spew out of a silver cigar-shaped UFO. "It was soft and fine to the touch," she said, "but not sticky. It stretches without tearing, although it stains the hands green."

During my travels investigating new UFO incidents throughout the country, several people have told me of having witnessed falls of "angel hair," but only one man has claimed to have obtained a sample and had it analyzed. In Aug. 1967, this man phoned me long distance. He identified himself as "Philip Berger." He said that he lived in Virginia, and had been reading my articles. Berger came up with something so startling that it might be a serious mistake to overlook it.

Mr. Berger said that his farm had been covered with strange strands of a substance that looked like "spun glass" (a common description for "angel hair"), and that he had managed to pick up some of it with a stick. He filled a plastic bottle to the brim with it, he said, and was staring at it as he talked with

me. “Funny thing,” he remarked, “the bottle is already half empty. I stuffed it full this morning.”

He asked me what he should do with it next. On the spur of the moment, I suggested he rush it to the nearest druggist and see if they could suggest a nearby lab that might analyze it. Since it was “melting” fast, I proposed that he have the air in the bottle analyzed as well. Two days later, he called me back. He sounded discouraged and apologetic.

“I went to a drugstore,” he said, “and they suggested that I take it to a hospital. By the time I got to the hospital, there was nothing in the bottle but a few slivers in the bottom. But there was an intern there who seemed very interested, and he went through a lot of trouble. He did like you said, used some kind of spectator-graph…”

“Spectroscope,” I corrected.

“Yeah, that was it – a spectroscope. Anyway, he said there was nothing in it but some kind of ordinary gas.”

“What kind of gas?”

“I think he said ‘fluorine’.”

I nearly fell of my chair. My research into the puzzle of the fertilizer and chemical plants had already led me to the discovery that the major waste product pouring from their smokestacks was fluoride! Mr. Berger was unable to give me the name of the intern, but he promised to go back and get the man to put his findings in writing for me. The name of the hospital was “County General,” which wasn’t much help, and Mr. Berger didn’t have a phone. He was calling me from a payphone. He gave me a mailing address, and I wrote to him three times. None of my letters came back, but I never heard from him again.

The problem here is to judge whether or not this was an honest man trying to be of help, or whether it was some outrageous prank. From the sound of quarters being poured into that payphone, the joke (if it was a joke) cost him several dollars and would have been quite pointless. At that time, no one knew of my research into factory smokestacks, and certainly no one knew that I was beginning to find correlations with fluoride. It would have been a very, very far-out coincidence for a hoaxer to have coincidentally come up with the very

thing I was already suspecting (i.e., that "angel hair" was serving as a means of sowing fluoride into the atmosphere).

Fluorine, in its basic form, is a greenish-yellow gas that is both pungent and corrosive. Mix it with hydrogen, and you have hydrofluoric acid, a chemical that attacks silica and is widely used to etch glass. Spray it on an automobile windshield and see what happens... Add it to hydrogen sulfide and you not only have a terrible smell, you also have a gas that can give you fluoride poisoning. It could produce fainting spells, weakness, nausea, and respiratory failure. Excessive exposure to this gas could cause the teeth to mottle and, in the case of a severe dose, cause the teeth to fall out. And apparently that is exactly what happened to those unfortunate farmers in Oklahoma. They were very likely exposed to a potent mixture of hydrogen sulfide and fluoride. Perhaps that Trenton, NJ watchman suffered from the same mixture.

According to The New York Times of Aug. 20, 1967, citizens in the tiny village of Garrison, Montana, were up in arms over a small phosphate plant that was pouring fluoride gasses into the air. "Fluoride gasses from the plant have brought complaints of damage to vegetation, animals, and human health since the plant was moved to Garrison four years ago." Federal, state, and county officials ordered the plant to shut down.

Sodium fluoride is a deadly poison and can produce emotional and mental problems. It contains an almost undetectable substance known as "mechanacide," which can do horrifying damage to the brain, destroy willpower, and create a feeling of helpless lethargy. These very symptoms were reported in the 1957 Canadian "epidemic."

If the UFOs are actually hostile, as many leading ufologists now contend, then a subtle long-range plan to poison our atmosphere with such substances might make sense. On the other hand, if the UFO entities need to breathe fluoride gasses, it would make equal sense for them to introduce it in small amounts over a very long period of time, giving us a chance to adjust to it. Hydrofluoric acid could be added to our atmosphere from the air by mixing it with some form of silicon, which would generally disintegrate (from the natural chemical action) before the resultant "angel hair" hit the ground. Occasionally, as in the 1954 windshield incidents, they might overdo it and release too strong a mixture. Normally, however, the hydrofluoric acid would "melt" high in the air. Being "hygroscopic," it would absorb, or be absorbed by, the moisture in

the clouds. An accidental overdose might produce a stinging rainfall such as fell in Toronto, Canada.

It would be extremely difficult and very costly to make all the tests necessary to confirm this hypothesis. The problem is compounded by the unhappy fact that we are adding a considerable amount of fluoride to the air ourselves. In 1942, hydrofluoric acid was substituted for sulfuric acid as an alkylating agent in high-test gasolines. So today, automobiles are contributing to the fluoride in the air. In fact, fluorides are the third largest air pollutant in urban areas, following sulfur dioxide and ozone. UFO skeptics could easily point to this as a possible explanation for nearly all of the cases cited in this article. But I have not been able to find sufficient medical or chemical proof to make a purely natural explanation acceptable. The Oklahoma incidents are beyond natural cause. One or two cases of auto windshield damage would make it easy to dismiss the pockmarking as a local aberration, a freak combination of the necessary gasses in a single area. But there were thousands of these cases scattered over the entire North American continent.

No, we must look deeper and study the situation very carefully and thoughtfully. The "Smellies" seem to be in our midst now, prowling homes near factories spewing out clouds of fluoride. Perhaps as the fluoride content of our air goes up, the visits of these mysterious critters – if they are critters – will increase. UFOs seem to be collecting like flies in areas where the fluoridated air is most intense. They have also been clustering around reservoirs in places where the drinking water is deliberately (though very minutely) fluoridated. Maybe they're even adding something of their own to our drinking water, as some ufologists have suggested.

Ufologists are unable to agree on many things in this complicated and contradictory business, but most of them concede that it is probable that more than one or two different "alien" groups are involved. There are many indications that these groups are in direct conflict with each other. This unprovable "fact" raises still another confusing possibility. It may be that one group is using fluoride gasses to combat the presence of another group.

Our life here on Earth is based upon the carbon atom. Exobiologists at Harvard and elsewhere have speculated that silicon could be used as a substitute for carbon on other planets, and that a silicon-based lifeform might be possible. If some of the ufonauts are composed of silicon instead of carbon, then

hydrofluoric acid would be a very effective weapon against them. If one group of ufonauts is especially interested in our planet and has reasons for keeping the silicon-based groups away, it would be reasonable for them to raise the fluoride content of the air. This could lead us to another startling conclusion: that the "puddles" of silicon found at UFO landing sites might actually be the remains of silicon-beings who had literally melted when they became exposed to our atmosphere.

This much we can say with certainty: Throughout man's history, we have recorded the frequent presence of gruesome, unspeakable "monsters" that were surrounded by the noxious odors of hydrogen sulfide and fluoride. Generally these "monsters" were regarded as evil and alien. They continue to appear, and the mysterious, inexplicable clouds of foul gas continue to invade homes, farmland, and whole towns. More and more people are suffering ill effects from these gasses. The fluoride count in our heavily polluted atmosphere continues to rise. "Angel hair" continues to fall. The Air Force and the UFO-philes have spent the last twenty years chasing lights in the sky when the real problem – and the ultimate answer – might be much closer, prowling living rooms in West Virginia, California, Florida, and Nebraska. Something very alien – and possibly, very dangerous – may be sitting on the barren plains of western Oklahoma. And more of "them" may be on their way.

Isn't it about time we made a real effort to find out?

CHAPTER 17

THE SECRET UFO-ASTRONAUT WAR – MEN MAGAZINE, SEPT. 1968

It was drizzling and cold, and Woodrow Derenberger, a middle-aged sewing machine salesman from Mineral Wells, WV was anxious to get home. He was driving his truck along Interstate 77, just south of Parkersburg, WV. Traffic was light and he was making good time. It was about 7:30 p.m. The date: Wednesday, Nov. 2, 1966. Suddenly, a strange object swooped down out of the rain and landed directly in front of him. Mr. Derenberger slammed on his brakes and watched in amazement as a man got out of the object that was, he said, shaped like an old-fashioned lamp chimney. The man was about five feet, nine inches tall, had pointed features and a dark complexion, and was dressed in a dark coat. As he approached the truck, Derenberger heard a voice that asked him to roll down the window. The man stepped up to the door silently, his arms folded across his chest, and Derenberger heard the voice again, although the man's face remained fixed in a grin. He claims this voice asked him who he was, where he was going, and what "those lights" were (indicating the city of Parkersburg in the distance). After a few minutes of rather meaningless "telepathic" conversation, the man returned to the object and it flew off. Derenberger stepped on the gas and sped home.

After he told his wife the incredible story, they decided to call the Parkersburg police. The police not only were not surprised, they admitted that two other people had reported an identical experience to them that day. Woodrow Derenberger found himself in the uneasy company of the growing crowd of controversial "contactees" – people who claim to have met the pilots of UFOs. (The author has talked with the other two witnesses. While they confirm the story, they do not want any publicity. "I just don't want to get involved," one of them said.)

At the request of the Parkersburg Police, Derenberger "starred" in a press conference, together with eight other witnesses who had reported seeing a UFO on the night of his "contact." Later, he voluntarily submitted to an extensive physical and psychiatric examination in a local hospital. There was an astonishing development when one of his examiners, a leading West

Virginia psychiatrist, became a "contactee" himself a few weeks afterwards. The psychiatrist (Dr. Alan Roberts) has talked freely about his own UFO experiences on radio programs, and has endorsed Mr. Derenberger.

A month later, Derenberger and his family were invited to Cocoa Beach at Cape Kennedy, where NASA's immense manned-space rocket center is located.

"I was interviewed every night for a week," Derenberger said later.

> Those men – some of them were supposed to be big shots at NASA – wanted to know every detail. They grilled me about my whole life history. At the end of the week, they told me that I hadn't said anything new. They'd heard it all before.
>
> "We know more about this than you do," they said. Then they showed me a big star-map and they pointed out a star on it. "This is where that flying saucer came from," they said. I don't know anything about astronomy, so I don't have any idea which star they were pointing at.

Derenberger came back from Cape Kennedy with Pictures, letters, and other proof that his visit had been real.

Is it possible that NASA might, indeed, know more about flying saucers than even the U.S. Air Force? It is not only possible, but is highly probable. Unidentified flying objects have frequently appeared over our rocket launching sites, where they have been tracked on radar and charted with theodolites. All of our astronauts have reported unidentifiable objects in outer space, and have taken many pictures of them (although it is difficult to wrest copies of these photos from NASA).

During the last American flight in Nov. 1966, James Lovell and Edwin "Buzz" Aldrin saw four peculiar things near their orbit. "We saw 4 objects lined up in a row," Lovell admitted, "and they weren't stars I Know."

Lovell should be something of an expert on UFOs. He was orbiting with Frank Bormann aboard GT-7 on Dec. 4, 1965, when a gigantic spherical object slowly crossed in front of them.

"I have a bogey at 10 o'clock high," Bormann radioed to ground control

calmly.

“Are you sure it isn’t the booster rocket?” the technicians on the ground radioed back.

“We know where the booster is,” Bormann said flatly. “This is an actual sighting.”

Neither man would make any further comment on that “actual sighting” once they were back on terra firma. Like the Air force, NASA has adopted a policy of secrecy when it comes to flying saucers. Recently, Mr. Robert Roentgen, the Washington correspondent for a West German television network, prepared a special documentary film on American UFO sightings. He called NASA’s Public Relations office to ask if he could obtain an official statement. He was received with interest, and a public relations officer assured him that the head of NASA, Mr. James W. Webb, would personally film the statement for him. He was asked to call back the next day to set up a definite shooting date. When Mr. Roentgen called back, this same man announced coldly that he could only say: “The National Aeronautics and Space Administration has no interest in unidentified flying objects, nor is it in any way involved in their investigation.” The German correspondent was dumbfounded, and asked for further explanation.

“I’m sorry,” the PR man muttered. “All I can do is read this statement for you again.”

Somebody – a very mysterious somebody – beat both the U.S. and Soviet Union into space. Unidentified orbiting objects were first detected in 1952, following an impossible east-to-west course (manmade satellites travel from west to east to take advantage of the earth’s rotation). At various times in the last 16 years, as many as four of these unknown satellites have been tracked by astronomers and radar stations at one time. There are three of them up there at the moment, circling the globe every 164 minutes. Their exact size is “classified.”

A month after the Russians sent the dog Laika into orbit in Nov. 1957, astronomers in Venezuela photographed not only Sputnik II, but also another unexplained object that was closely following it.

On several occasions, UFOs have suddenly appeared from nowhere and flown

alongside unmanned space capsules and rocket probes. One such object doggedly pursued a Polaris rocket on Jan. 10, 1961, and the radar station at Cape Kennedy mistakenly locked in on it. On April 8, 1964, four unidentified objects zeroed in on an unmanned Gemini capsule, and stayed with it for one complete orbit around the earth.

America's first astronaut, Col. John Glenn, has been quoted by columnist Leonard Lyons as saying that he believed "certain reports of flying saucers are legitimate." Glenn gave all the UFO buffs a thrill when he radioed descriptions of "fireflies in space" as he made his historical flight on Feb. 20, 1962. He said there were thousands of these greenish-yellow things swirling across the sky. He watched them approach his capsule, noting that he was certain they were not emanating from the capsule itself. "As far as I know," Glenn said, "the true identity of these particles is still a mystery."

The startling thing is that this very same phenomenon had been reported a decade earlier by the controversial contactee, George Adamski. Adamski claimed that he had been taken for a ride into space by a flying saucer. In a book published in 1955, he described passing through "a belt of billions of multi-colored fireflies."

Astronauts Scott Carpenter and Gordon Cooper also told of seeing these belts of glittering objects. Bormann and Lovell said that the belt appeared in front of them, moving at right angles to their path. NASA's official explanation for the phenomenon is that the "fireflies" are caused by particles of ice coming from the life-support systems of the space capsules themselves. But if you study the many excellent photos taken of manned capsules in orbit during the rendezvous tests, you will not find any sign of ice of any kind.

Soviet cosmonauts have reportedly had more than their share of problems with mysterious objects in outer space. A three-man space capsule orbited in Oct. 1963, and was buffeted and tossed around like a ping-pong ball when a group of large circular objects surrounded it. The objects were said to have followed the Russian craft halfway around the world, and nearly caused the flight to end in disaster.

In March 1965, the Soviet Union proudly announced that cosmonauts Pavel I. Belyayev and Alexei A. Leonov were in orbit for "a prolonged space flight." But a few hours later, a "satellite" appeared near their capsule, according to

the Russian news agency Tass, and after only 18 orbits, they came hurtling out of the sky, engulfed in a ball of flame. They crashed into a snow bank 873 miles north of their planned target area, and nearly froze to death before rescuers found them.

Col. Vladimir Komarov died of a sudden heart attack while in orbit on April 24, 1967. Monitoring stations all over the world were tuned in to the medical apparatus attached to his body, and heard his heart stop. What could give a healthy and thoroughly examined and tested space pilot a heart attack in the stillness of the outer limits? We'll never know… The official Soviet explanation for his death was that he was killed when his space vehicle crashed.

Being a space pioneer is a hazardous business. Nine American astronauts have been killed suddenly in the past three years. Three died in a fire aboard an Apollo capsule, while the others were killed in plane and automobile crashes. Russia's first man in space, Yuri Gagarin, was also recently killed in a plane tragedy. Both John Glenn and Gagarin "slipped in the bathtub" after their historic flights and suffered damage to the inner ear, which kept them grounded and affected their sense of balance. It is a rather remarkable coincidence that both men should have the same kind of freak accident and sustain identical injuries.

The late Frank Edwards, a well-known writer and newscaster, claimed that "one of our early astronauts" had such a hair-raising encounter with a UFO in outer space that he went into emotional shock and was never sent up again.

Astronauts James McDivitt and the late Edward White reported seeing "a mysterious object in space" as they orbited over china. Millions heard them describe it live on radio and TV. It was "a glowing, egg-shaped thing with arms or projections sticking out of it," they reported. They also saw another UFO over Hawaii on that same flight in June 1965. Later McDivitt asserted, "I don't know what it was and, so far, no one else does, either."

Two pilots of the X-15 rocket plane also had close brushes with unidentified flying objects in the early 1960s. The late Joe Walker (who was killed in a freak air collision that destroyed the prototype of the A-11 supersonic bomber) saw a formation of cylindrical objects at an altitude of 246,700 feet in the spring of 1962. His onboard cameras photographed the objects. These movies

were later shown at a single press conference, and then never heard of again.

A few months later, on July 17, 1962, Major Robert White was flying the X-15 at 314,750 feet when a gray-white object appeared and paced alongside his plane. He was doing 3,832 miles per hour at the time. The thing moved ahead of him and finally glided out of sight over his canopy. “There are things out there!” he shouted excitedly into his radio. “There absolutely are!”

Both the U.S. and soviet space efforts have been plagued by a bizarre sequence of coincidences and accidents that appear to be tantamount to sabotage. This is ridiculous, of course, unless we are trying to sabotage each other. Actually, there is a surprising amount of cooperation and exchange of information between the two nations on matters dealing with space.

Nevertheless, both American and soviet rockets have an eerie habit of disappearing soon after launch. Since these rockets are carefully tracked both visually and by radar from the moment they leave their pads, the disappearances are all the more baffling. They do not explode. They do not crash. They simply vanish.

For example, a soviet “Molniya” communications satellite was put into orbit early in 1967, and was meant to stay aloft for years. It disappeared without a trace. Other Soviet Satellites in fixed circuits around the Earth have suddenly and mysteriously de-orbited and crashed aimlessly to the Earth. A number of American rockets have disappeared completely, seconds after being launched.

Another peculiar problem is the malfunction of communications equipment. This may be the most serious problem of all. Between 1962-64, four different U.S. satellites mysteriously stopped transmitting signals back to earth. Then, months later, they just as mysteriously resumed transmissions. In 1967, a satellite that had been silent for almost five years suddenly began broadcasting again.

What makes this so baffling is the fact that all satellites and space capsules carry multiple transmitters and backup systems. If one fails, the other cuts in automatically. This equipment has been developed to a fine degree and should be almost foolproof. But it isn’t. Ufologists are concerned over these incidents, because it is known that the flying saucers can somehow interfere with electrical apparatus at will. This is called the “EM (Electromagnetic) Effect” and has been reported hundreds of times. Cars have stalled, and radios and TV

sets have gone dead, when UFOs were in the vicinity. In a number of well-documented cases, police radios have suddenly emitted strange sounds and voices as weird objects loomed overhead. The voices are usually described as "rapid-fire grunting" – guttural sounds somewhat like a combination of Spanish and German. No one has ever been able to identify the language, although thousands of persons, including ham radio operators, have picked up these voices.

Astronaut Gordon Cooper has also heard these weird voice transmissions. During his fourth pass over Hawaii on May 15, 1963, Cooper's signals to ground control were sharply interrupted by an "unintelligible foreign language." NASA technicians were puzzled. Who could have deliberately cut in on the VHF (Very High Frequency) channel reserved for space flights? Tapes of the broadcast stymied language experts. The source of the strange "grunting" was never determined.

On the same flight, Gordon Cooper reported that a glowing greenish disk with a red tail was closing in on his spacecraft. He was passing over Australia at the time, and personnel at the Muchea Tracking Station scurried outside to take a look. Over 200 persons clearly saw the object, which was apparently much bigger than Cooper's little space capsule. His description of it was broadcast worldwide on radio and television but, when he returned to the ground, he refused to discuss it.

"As far as I am concerned," Cooper said later, "there have been too many unexplained examples of UFO sightings around this Earth for us to rule out the possibility that some form of life exists out there, beyond our own world."

In June 1966, a whole chain of strange events surrounded the successful attempt to rendezvous a manned capsule and a target vehicle in space. Originally, astronauts Thomas P. Stafford and Eugene A. Cernan were supposed to be launched immediately after the ATDA target vehicle was sent aloft. But their liftoff was suddenly postponed. NASA hastily explained that there was some "interference" with the radio relays to and from the ground. NBC's Huntley and Brinkley were at the Cape doing a live broadcast of the space launches. That afternoon, June 1st, they set astonishing precedent and entered into a discussion of flying saucers – the only time this was ever done on a rocket launch program. They read a carefully prepared statement from the U.S. Air Force that admitted that UFOs had been seen by astronauts, but that

"flying saucers were reported more frequently in other parts of the world, such as South America, than in the United States." This eight-minute discussion really came out of left field. It seemed to indicate that everyone at the Cape knew there was "something up there" besides the ATDA vehicle.

That night, at about 10:30 p.m., a news flash was aired by all of the radio and TV networks declaring, "The Defense Department has announced that three UFOs are in orbit with the target vehicle."

These UFOs had been picked up by the radar net tracking the ATDA craft. The next day, there were varying reports of from 4 to 12 unidentified objects in orbit with the vehicle. The Air Force lamely explained that these objects were probably part of the plastic shroud that covered the rendezvous device at launch.

Stafford and Cernan were kept on the ground for two days until those problems of "interference" were resolved. When they were finally launched on June 3rd, they found that the plastic covering of the ATDA vehicle had failed to jettison and was still in place. In any case, the plastic would not have given a radar return. There was no further comment from NASA, the Air Force, or the Defense Department about those UFOs.

A month later, on July 19, 1966, the command pilot of Gemini-10, John W. Young, radioed to ground control and reported: "We have two bright objects up here in our orbital path. I don't think they're stars. They look like we are going right along with them."

The newsmen in the ground control center perked up their ears, but the loudspeaker suddenly went dead. NASA officials were apparently "censoring" Young's descriptions of the objects. When the speakers cut in again, Young was saying, "They just disappeared. I guess they were satellites of some kind."

Four hours later, a spokesman for the Dept. of Defense told reporters that a check had been made of all the known objects in space – 1,091 artificial satellites and pieces of rocket debris – and that one of them could have been the "two bright objects."

"We have been unable to identify the two satellites," the spokesman said.

The problem of unidentified flying objects is much more complex and worrisome than most UFO buffs would like to believe. The Aerial

Phenomenon Research Organization (APRO) has been studying the mystery for 16 years, and L.J. Lorenzen, the electronics engineer who heads the organization, has expressed concern that the objects may ultimately prove to be hostile to us. If this is the case, then the government secrecy is understandable. It would be standard military procedure to study and try to understand any potential threat as quietly as possible. Premature disclosure of the nature and intent of the mysterious objects might very well lead to public panic.

A "false target," in the form of the Air Force's "Project Blue Book," was established in 1952 to absorb the brunt of the UFO buffs' anger and confusion. It is very probable that NASA and other organizations outside the Air Force are far more concerned with the problem and Know a great deal about it. Some well-informed observers, such as Frank Edwards, have suggested that somehow the UFOs may actually be trying to impede our space efforts and keep us bound to this pitiful little planet.

The evidence to support this uncomfortable theory mounts daily. Since 1964, there have been innumerable cases in which UFOs have not only jammed radios and stalled cars, but have also caused telephone systems to fail. There were over 1,000 unexplained "blackouts" in the U.S. last year. Most of these occurred in areas where UFO sightings had become commonplace. Another weird factor is the frequent outbreak of unexplained fires in such areas, and the discovery of abandoned, completely burned out automobiles. Some of these autos have been found in inaccessible places such as wooded hilltops, where they could not possibly have been driven or towed. How did they get there? No one knows.

Cape Kennedy and the Space Center in Houston, TX have not escaped these eerie problems. On Jan. 27, 1967, astronauts Virgil Grissom, Edward White, and Roger Chaffee were going through a dry run in an Apollo Command Module atop a rocket at Cape Kennedy. A telephone wire ran from the ground control center to the capsule. Grissom was talking to the center by wire, not by radio, yet unnatural static and weird noises were drowning out his voice.

"If I can't talk to you from here," Grissom complained, "how do you expect to hear me from the moon?"

Virgil Grissom never made it to the moon. A few minutes later, a sudden fire engulfed the interior of the module, and all three men died instantly.

Is somebody somewhere trying to tell us something?

CHAPTER 18

UFOS AND ABOMINABLE SNOWMEN: A NOTED AUTHORITY'S WEIRDEST CASES – MALE MAGAZINE, OCT. 1969

You are driving down a lonely country road late at night, with lively music from your radio helping to keep you alert. You haven't been drinking. You just want to get home to bed. Suddenly, your headlights seem to go dim, and you fiddle with the switch to no avail. Then, heavy static drowns out the music on the radio. You feel an eerie, tingling sensation, and an indefinable fear tickles the back of your head and dries your throat. Then, a tall figure shambles out of the bushes alongside the road, and steps in front of your fading headlights. It is at least seven feet tall, maybe more, and it seems to be covered with long hair from head to foot. It opens its mouth and screams – a bloodcurdling cry. The face is demon-like, the eyes a fiery red. You are gripped with terror; you jam the accelerator to the floorboards, and speed off without looking back.

Later, when you try to tell your friends about it, they laugh out loud and kid you. So, you don't dare mention it again.

In the past few years, hundreds of people in California, Michigan, Florida, New York, India, Brazil, Argentina, and dozens of other places have had identical experiences with these monsters and freaks, which appear out of nowhere and then disappear again into limbo. Posses using dogs and helicopters have searched in vain for these mysterious creatures. Zoologists and biologists have collected plaster casts of the gigantic footprints they often leave behind. Early in 1969, two world-famous scientists finally discovered what might have been the actual body of one of these half-human beasts. They examined it and photographed it. And then someone stole the corpse. It hasn't been seen since.

Strangest of all, these hairy monsters have a disturbing habit of turning up in areas where flying saucers have been seen. Their brief appearances are often accompanied by manifestations that have long been associated with UFOs, such as the dimming of headlights, radio static, and the stalling of motor vehicles. Ufologists have labeled such phenomena "the electromagnetic (EM) effect," assuming that flying saucers are sometimes surrounded by powerful

magnetic fields that wreak havoc with electrical systems. There are thousands of cases of this. In 1966-68, a team of scientists at Colorado University studied the EM effect carefully as part of an overall UFO investigation financed by the U.S. Air Force. They were completely baffled.

"Of all the physical effects claimed to be due to the presence of UFOS," the Colorado scientists stated in their final report, "the alleged malfunction of automobile motors is perhaps the most puzzling. This claim is frequently made in reports involving multiple, independent witnesses. Witnesses seem certain that the function of their cars was affected by the unidentified object, which sometimes reportedly was not seen until after the malfunction was noted. No satisfactory explanation for such effects, if indeed they occurred, is apparent."

On Sunday evening, May 18, 1969, the lights went out in a small area outside rising sun, Indiana (in Ohio County). The home of Mr. and Mrs. Lester Kaiser was without power for about two hours. They thought nothing of the incident at the time, although strange lights and weird flying objects had occasionally been sighted along a nearby ridge.

At 7:30 p.m. on the following evening, May 19th, young George Kaiser was walking towards a tractor on the farm, when his dog began to growl and bark. He looked up and saw a grotesque figure standing about 25 feet away. Whatever it was, it was the size of a man, and was covered with black fur.

"I watched it for about two minutes before it saw me," young Kaiser told investigators later. "It stood in a fairly upright position, although it was bent over in the middle of its back, with arms about the same height as a normal human being, I'd say it was about 5'8" or so, and had a very muscular structure. The head sat directly on the shoulders and the face was black, with hair that stuck out on the back of its head. It had eyes set close together and a very short forehead. It was covered with hair, except for the back of the hands and the face. The hands looked like normal hands, not claws."

George was transfixed with shock and fright for a moment. Then he made a move to get into the family automobile nearby. The creature made a "strange grunting sound," turned, jumped over a ditch, and ran down the road at high speed, quickly disappearing out of sight. Footprints were found in the dirt by the ditch. They showed three toes plus a big toe. Plaster casts were later made of these prints.

A neighbor, Mr. Charles Rolfing, reportedly watched an unidentified flying object for about eight minutes, shortly after 10:15 p.m. on May 20th, as it moved about the area. He studied it through binoculars and described it as being a glowing, greenish white.

So here we have a sequence of interesting coincidences: a local power failure on May 18th; a creature sighting on May 19th; and a UFO sighting on May 20th. As Ian Fleming's Goldfinger remarked, "Once is happen stance; twice is coincidence; three times is enemy action."

Most of the modern ABSM (Abominable Snowman) sightings in the U.S. have been made by witnesses in automobiles on isolated backroads. It is rare for the creatures to openly approach a house or farm as one apparently did in Indiana. Canada has a long history of ABSM sightings dating back to the middle of the 19th Century. California's "Bigfoot" has been a local legend for decades. The mountainous, heavily forested state of West Virginia has produced a fascinating catalog of hairy bogeymen.

A West Virginian named W.C. "Doc" Priestley claimed that a hairy humanoid ruined the electrical system of his automobile in 1960. That summer, numerous people around Parsons, WV allegedly saw a gruesome eight-foot-tall thing covered with shaggy hair and graced with two huge eyes that "shone like big balls of fire." In October 1960, "Doc" Priestley was driving through the Monongahela National Forest about three miles north of Marlinton, WV, when his car, which had been "purring like a kitten," suddenly sputtered and stopped.

"Then I saw it," Priestley said. "To my left, beside the road, stood this monster with long hair pointing straight up."

A group of Priestley's friends were driving on ahead in a bus. When they noticed that he was no longer directly behind them, they turned around and drove back.

"I don't know how long I sat there," Priestley continued, "until the boys missed me and backed up the bus to where I was. It seemed the monster was very much afraid of the bus and dropped his hair," (which had been standing on end). "To my surprise, as soon as he did this, my car started to run again. I didn't tell the boys what I had seen. The thing took off when the bus stopped."

Priestley again started to follow along behind the bus, but his car started to act

up a second time. “I could see the sparks flying from under the hood of my car as if it had a very bad short,” he noted. “And sure enough, there beside the road stood the monster again. The points were completely burned out of my car.”

The bus backed up again and, as soon as it appeared, the monster melted into the forest.

Two months later, on Dec. 31, 1960, Charles Stover, 25, was driving a bakery truck along a backwoods road near Hickory Flats, WV, when he rounded a curve and came face-to-face with a 6-foot tall creature “standing erect, with hair all over his body.” It was shaped like a man, he said, and he almost collided with it. He stopped a short distance away and took a brief second look at the thing. That was more than enough. He sped to the nearest filling station and a group of men formed a posse and went back to the spot. They found upturned rocks and strange marks on the ground, but the monster was gone.

Armed posses have been chasing these things without success for years. Back in 1940-41, scores of people saw a huge, hair-covered humanoid outside of Mt. Vernon, IL. It was said to be able to leap 20-foot wide ditches with apparent ease, and was reported to have killed at least one dog. Large posses of armed men searched the entire area repeatedly, but all they found were gigantic footprints.

Bears and other known animals simply don’t fit the descriptions of these mystery monsters. Nor do bears make a habit of attacking people in moving vehicles. The monsters do.

The pattern is always the same. Reliable witnesses report seeing the elusive ABSM. Massive searches are launched. Footprints are found. But the creatures themselves have seemingly vanished into thin air.

In Clanton, Alabama, in 1960, several witnesses observed a giant hairy creature prowling the local woods. It left behind huge tracks.

In Madison, Indiana, in 1962, several farmers glimpsed another hairy humanoid. Footprints were found. Posses were formed. No results.

In Lost Gap, Mississippi, in 1962, there were many reports of a giant nine-foot tall beast with glowing green eyes. Local police were convinced that it

existed. Helicopters and bloodhounds were used in a massive search. The creature got away.

In 1964, another enormous "something" was seen by many witnesses near Sister Lakes, Michigan. Mobs of hunters tried in vain to track it down. It came back the next year, appearing in the vicinity of Monroe, Mi. Mrs. Rose Owen and her daughter, Christine Van Archer, said that a hairy monster that "grunted and growled like a mad dog," jumped on the side of their car, and grabbed Christine by the hair. The girl suffered a black eye from the incident. Another girl, Shirley Morrin, 18, of Temperance, MI, said that a similar beast had leaped at her car, broken her windshield and scratched her arm. As usual, huge posses covered every square inch of ground in the area and found nothing. All of these incidents took place near the Enrico Fermi Atomic Power Plant. Flying saucer sightings are commonplace in the region. The famous UFO flap of March 1966 occurred nearby. UFOs have shown a decided interest in atomic installations all over the world.

The year 1966 was not only a peak period for UFO activity. It also marked a major outbreak of monsters all across the country. On May 21, 1966, a group of young people in an automobile encountered a giant, faceless creature in broad daylight in the Historical Park at Morristown, NJ. They told local police that it was well over six feet tall, had huge shoulders, and was covered with hair. It shuffled up to a parked car and thumped on the back of it. The head was either pulled down into the shoulders, or it was headless. The witnesses did not linger to examine it closely. During the past thirty years, a monster dubbed the "Jersey Devil" has been repeatedly seen all over the state.

In July 1966, a giant hairy monster reportedly prowled the streets of Jessore, East Pakistan. It killed four people. Witnesses swore that it was not a tiger or other known animal. The army was called out to search for it. It was never caught.

That same month, five people in a car on a beach on Presque Isle in Erie, Pennsylvania, reportedly saw a brilliantly illuminated flying saucer land on July 31, 1966. They were terrified when a tall figure shuffled up to their car in the dark. Large footprints were later found at the site. A few days later, a tall hairy being appeared near a small lake in Edinboro, Pennsylvania (18 miles from Erie) and a posse of college students went hunting for it. Although they claimed to have glimpsed the creature, it got away as usual.

In the fall of 1966, a new kind of monster popped up in West Virginia. From November 1966 to the summer of 1967, more than 100 people had close encounters with a giant winged entity that became known as "The Bird" or "Mothman." It had blazing red eyes, broad shoulders, a ten-foot wingspan, and stood almost seven feet tall. Schoolteachers, ministers, newspaper reporters, and other reliable persons claimed to have seen it. All of their descriptions were identical. Simultaneously, there was a massive UFO "flap" in the same area of the Ohio River Valley, with flying saucers making nightly appearances before thousands of witnesses. Dogs and cattle disappeared throughout the region. Mutilated, bloodless carcasses were found in both West Virginia and Ohio.

Is it possible that our hairy (and feathery) humanoids are riding around in flying saucers? There is certainly a considerable amount of evidence to indicate this. The fact that they always manage to elude hundreds of pursuers, including bloodhounds and helicopters, suggests that they must have some means of rapid transportation that enables them to instantly flee an area after staging an enigmatic appearance. A large, hairy animal, no matter how cunning, could hardly enter a fairly densely populated area such as upstate New York (they have been seen near Ithaca, site of a major UFO flap in 1967), and escape again.

Experts have offered various theories and speculations. It has been suggested that the UFOs are planting these creatures amongst us, or that the UFOs are chasing and collecting these creatures every time they appear. One UFO group believes these monsters spring from hidden caves.

It is also possible that this is a dual problem. There is evidence that some of the animals are, indeed, of UFO origin, while others may have always been hiding in our forests and parks, and are rarely seen.

In 1966, somebody somewhere actually shot and killed one of these tall, hairy humanoids. We may never know who did it, or where. But the body was immediately frozen in a huge cake of ice, and eventually found its way into the sideshow of a traveling circus in the Midwest. For two years, thousands of people paid 35 cents apiece to enter a refrigerated van and stare at this wonder. Finally, a herpetologist named Terry Cullen wandered into the sideshow and became the first to recognize this might be the scientific find of the century. He got in touch with one of America's foremost zoologists and a

leading authority on the Abominable Snowman, Ivan T. Sanderson.

Accompanied by Dr. Bernard Heuvelmans, Europe's leading expert on unusual animals, Sanderson tracked the block of ice down to its winter headquarters in Rollingstone, Minnesota (near Minneapolis). There the two men, together with other specialists, huddled in the van in below-zero temperatures and carefully measured and photographed the body. It was their considered opinion that it was genuine.

The frozen carcass was six feet long and covered with hair two to four inches long. It had apparently been shot in the right eye, and in the chest. The hands were of abnormal size and thickness, measuring seven and one-half inches wide and eleven inches long. The feet were massive and gorilla-like, except for the big toes, which seemed to be manlike. The nose was "pugged" and the lips were very thin, almost nonexistent. It conformed to the descriptions of eyewitnesses that had been published over the years.

The creature was neither man nor ape. It was an unknown animal. Perhaps it was the long-searched for "missing link." Dr. Heuvelmans labeled it Homo pongoides ("apelike man").

The experts carefully considered every possibility, including hoax. Professor George A. Agogino of the Paleo-Indian Institute in New Mexico stated, "While it is impossible to rule out fraud, the structure of the ice and the complexity of making a composite animal with scientific continuity makes this unlikely."

Dr. Heuvelmans was even more specific in his report, which was published in the Bulletin of the Royal Institute of Natural Sciences of Belgium: "It cannot be an artificial, entirely manufactured object... It cannot be a composite, produced by assembling anatomical parts taken from living beings of different species... It cannot be a normal individual belonging to any of the known races of modern man... It cannot be an abnormal individual, or freak."

It looked as if the long, long trail was ended. The legendary hairy monster had finally been brought to bay. Sanderson contacted the Smithsonian institution in Washington, and they expressed immediate interest.

But Mr. Frank Hansen, the caretaker of the refrigerated van, took a dim view of these proceedings. He expressed concern over the laws that forbid transporting bullet-ridden cadavers from state to state. He also refused to identify the actual

owner of the carcass, and could not tell the scientists where or how the creature had been killed.

Sanderson, Heuvelmans, and their colleagues were convinced that the body was genuine. They had photographs and carefully compiled scientific data to back up their opinion. But when other scientists hurried to Rollingstone to view the remains, they found a crude wax effigy!

"The moment official inquiries were initiated," Sanderson said recently, "the owner came to the place in Minnesota where the specimen was stored, removed it in a refrigerator truck, and substituted some form of copy made in wax."

The "Missing Link" is again missing! Its whereabouts are still unknown.

So, we are almost back to where we started. Meanwhile, people continue to see these mysterious animals. In the spring of 1969, Don Cox reportedly saw a hairy figure eight to ten feet tall near Beacon Rock State park, Washington. "I first saw what I thought to be a tree leaning toward the middle of the road," Mr. Cox said. "I slowed my car and turned my headlights to high beam. It was then that I saw this fur-covered human form with the face of an ape. It ran across the road in front of the car, leaped up a 40-degree slope, and disappeared into the woods."

In the fall of 1968, a group of hunters encountered an ABSM type near Fremont, Wisconsin. It got away from them, leaving behind the usual giant footprints. Other reports have come in from Montana, Oregon, Georgia, and a hundred other places in between.

It is more probable that these are not actual animals, but are distortions of reality, inserted into our space-time continuum by the mischievous forces of the "superspectrum." The reported density of some of these creatures indicates they are not flesh and blood, but are composed of highly condensed atoms – comparable with, say, plutonium. And like plutonium, a manmade radioactive metal, these creatures deteriorate at a very rapid rate.

Since energy masses in the superspectrum can alter their frequencies and move up and down the electromagnetic spectrum, we can assume they can also manipulate atomic structure and enter our plane of reality by creating atoms compatible with our atomic structure. The ancients called this process

"transmogrification." heavier, tightly compacted atoms with a dense field of orbiting electrons dissipate their energy quickly. Plutonium is a very unstable element, prone to spontaneous combustion. Let's imagine that when energies of the superspectrum vibrate down into our reality, they change into very short-lived atoms of unusual density. In the early stages of creation, the transmogrified entities are relatively harmless to us but, when deterioration begins to occur, they throw off electrons and radiation that can harm humans and animals in the same way that flying saucers harm us.

Another byproduct of atomic deterioration is its curious effect upon electrical apparatus. One of the first devices invented to test radioactive materials was the electroscope. This was simply two pieces of gold leaf hanging from a metal rod in a bottle. The gold conductors were charged with static electricity and repelled each other, spreading apart. When a radioactive substance was held over the rod, the gold leaves fell together, their charges having been instantly dissipated. This same effect can stall electrical ignitions and disrupt power lines and telephone communications, not because of the electromagnetic effect, but because the energy field of the radioactive monster or UFO interferes with the atomic qualities of the wire temporarily. Electricity cannot pass through the affected wiring until the energy field is removed.

The Kelly family near Mahomet, IL had an encounter with a UFO in October 1967, which resulted in a very peculiar aftermath. Their lights didn't go out, but their electric bill for the following month went crazy, jumping by 500%. Whatever the thing was, it kept coming back to the Kelly homestead and apparently made their electric meter run wild. Then, at 4 a.m. on the morning of Tuesday, Dec. 19, 1967, Mrs. Maryellen Kelly looked outside to see what was agitating her dog. There, hovering directly above some nearby trees, she saw what she described as a great, glowing, orange-yellowish "thing." it rose to the northeast and zipped away.

"The next day," she said later, "my face started to get red. My eyes were bloodshot, my hands were red, and the exposed area between my short slacks and boots I had been wearing turned red, too. My left ear hurt and, when I blew my nose, it bled."

I have examined dead animals in UFO areas that had blood running from their ears, noses, and mouths. This is almost a sure sign of concussion – a sudden increase in air pressure. An ordinary explosion can cause this, of course, but in

many of these cases, no explosion was heard. There are cases of unexplained human deaths by concussion going all the way back to 1946.

Some our monsters remain in an area for several days and are seen by many people before they finally disappear. Token attacks on domestic animals occur throughout the period, because the monster is somehow replenishing its diminishing energies with earthy animal matter. But it is a losing battle, and the monster must ultimately melt away, leaving nothing but a terrible stench behind.

In several cases, UFO lights have appeared above the monsters and cast a powerful beam of light onto them. The monsters vanished leaving only a residue of silicon carbide (SiC), a very hard, crystalline compound that has been found at hundreds of UFO and monster sites all over the world. Often it is mistaken for common furnace slag. It is logically the only remains of the transmogrification process.

The fact that UFOs have been seen "attacking" entities with light beams has inspired theories that the flying saucers are policing Earth and protecting us from monsters. At the Presque Isle sighting, a tall hairy monster approached a group of witnesses in a car. A luminous aerial object appeared, firing beams in all directions, and the monster vanished. Its footprints were found on the sandy beach, and a small quantity of silicon and silicon carbide was found at the spot where the tracks abruptly stopped.

Believers in the extraterrestrial hypothesis have been repeatedly disappointed by forms of silicon – a fairly common substance – at UFO sites. They would prefer to find some exotic, unidentifiable metal "not of this earth."

In the prelude to the great 1947 UFO wave in the U.S., the "ghost rockets" that swarmed over Scandinavia in 1946 left large quantities of silicon carbide in their paths. And the most important UFO event of 1947, the complex "Maury Island Affair" in Tacoma, WA also produced a great heap of "slag."

We cannot name the place where flying saucers and hairy monsters come from, but we do know where they go. They poor slobs literally melt.

But clearly, these fellows are nobody to fool with. In many of the dozens of cases I have studied, the creatures approached or even attacked automobiles and their drivers. Animals such as dogs, sheep, and cattle were found killed or

mutilated in a significant number of cases.

Throughout 1972, dozens of people in the Pittsburgh, PA area received unwelcome glimpses of a tall, hair-covered monster. While the hardcore UFO buffs howled with derision, local researcher Stan Gordon confirmed findings that I had published years earlier: both UFOs and monsters seemed to zero in on human females undergoing their menstrual period. I also noted that animal disappearance and mutilations were commonplace in UFO/monster areas. Gordon found that dogs, cats, chickens, and sheep were disappearing or meeting horrible fates in the wake of the monster sightings.

This raises a very important question: If these creatures are real, what do they eat? The obvious answer is anything or anyone they want to. An animal 7 to 10 feet tall and weighing from 300 to 800 pounds (judging from the depth of the footprints) must have a voracious appetite. If they are vegetarians like, say, elephants, they would leave wide path of despoiled foliage. If they are carnivorous, they would certainly require more than the occasional cat or dog. They would be emptying entire chicken coops, gulping down whole herds of sheep, or grabbing dozens of toddlers on their way to kindergarten.

The problem is that the animal disappearances in these areas are too few. They seem to be nothing but token attacks, perhaps to support a belief that they are real animals.

However, thousands of cows do vanish during each big UFO wave, often leading local police on wild-goose chases thinking they are pursuing cattle rustlers equipped with silent airplanes or helicopters. The first known UFO cattlenapping took place during the “airship” wave of 1897. A family reportedly watched a cigar-shaped object swoop over their farm near Vernon, Kansas that April. It was occupied by six strange beings. They jabbered in a foreign language as they lowered a rope, lassoed one of the cows, hauled it aboard, and flew away. This episode has been reprinted in great detail in almost every UFO book out there. There are many modern cases identical to this.

Point Pleasant, West Virginia’s winged “Mothman” left behind only a few footprints and droppings (which disappeared soon after I turned them over to a testing facility). Oddly, most of the “Mothman prints” looked like those of a giant dog. Similar tracks have been found at other monster sites around the

world.

One morning is April of 1969, Ernest Atkins stepped from his home on a farm near New Haven, WV (very close to Pt. Pleasant), and found his beagle pup dead in his yard. “There was no evidence that the pup died in a fight,” Adkins said. “But there was a large, very neat hole in its side, and the animal’s heart was lying outside the body. It looked as if something had chewed it out. There were no other marks on the body.”

But no known animal would, or could, neatly tear the heart out of a dog without leaving other marks on the carcass. And any animal that might attempt such a thing would certainly have eaten the heart or some part of the dog.

We investigated the situation in Pt. Pleasant as thoroughly and as carefully as was humanly possible. But after all of our interviews and all of our experiences, we were still left with the basic, disturbing question: What is really on the loose in West Virginia, Pennsylvania, Ohio, and other isolated “window areas” of the world?

There is an ancient religious theory that contends that demons and gods need physical matter from this world to aid their own materializations. And once they have materialized in a physical form, they must replenish themselves frequently to retain that form. This, of course, is found in numerous variations in the vampire lore of Europe. The deaths and disappearances of animals and people during these mysterious invasions has always been carefully explained by some kind of phenomenon acceptable to the people of the period. We no longer believe in vampires, but millions of us now believe in flying saucers from outer space, and even in giant, red-eyed monsters.

Perhaps one of these days you will come face-to-face with one of these tall humanoids near your own hometown. If you can bring it in – alive or dead – don’t sell it to a sideshow. There are several top scientists who will want to talk to you.

But be careful. Wherever these monsters tread, the flying saucers (and the Men in Black) are never very far behind.

CHAPTER 19

THE FLYING SAUCER CRIME WAVE THEY CAN'T COVER UP – SAGA MAGAZINE, DEC. 1968

"It's a science-fiction nightmare!" a burly sheriff in West Virginia groaned recently. "And there doesn't seem to be anybody who can help us."

"I don't give a damn what the Air Force says," another sheriff in Texas complained. "Something big is happening, and we need help."

"We've been getting too many cases of people being hurt, burned, gassed, and paralyzed," a public health official in New York State remarked grimly. "We asked the Air Force directly for advice, and they told us there was nothing to it – that it was all nonsense."

These men, and many other responsible authorities throughout the United States, are trying to cope with the horrifying problems left in the wake of the eerie, nocturnal visitors known as flying saucers.

The record is long, appalling, and exceptionally well-documented. People all over the world have been pursued, injured, kidnapped, and even killed by UFOs. Automobiles have been wrecked, and planes have crashed because of flying saucers.

It is a lonely battle for most of the people involved. Twenty years of ridicule has made the subject of unidentified flying objects disreputable and largely unapproachable. No effective program on the federal government level has been created to deal with the situation. Only in the last year has the FBI cautiously begun to get its feet wet by studying, often secretly, some of the hair-raising UFO incidents now pouring in from everywhere.

The U.S. Air Force has confined its investigations largely to a public relations effort designed to discredit the problem. Astronomers and physicists have been assigned to investigate cases that should have been turned over to a high-level law enforcement agency or a branch of military intelligence.

The Air Force says unidentified flying objects are "weather balloons" and mirages. The astronomers blame meteors, lightning bolts, and "marsh gas."

Even the hardcore ufologists are sharply divided in their interpretations of the mass of hostile incidents now documented in their files. These cases rarely make headlines outside of the areas where they occurred because there are so many of them. An entire edition of a Sunday newspaper could be devoted to the new UFO cases of a single week, and there would still be cases left over!

As far back as 1953, there are records of UFO attacks. In November of that year, two men, Albert and James Grear, were standing in a field near Zanesville, OH when, according to their story (which not even the ufologists took seriously at the time), James started to rise into the air, seeming to levitate toward a shining object high above. His brother grabbed his legs and held on for dear life, hauling him back to the ground.

Had a UFO tried to kidnap James Grear?

Scores of other cases involve attacks on motorists who have sworn that the control of their vehicles had somehow been wrested from them. Two young men in Idaho, Will Begay and Clyde Soccie, burst into the office of the Sheriff of Bonneville County on the night of Nov. 2, 1967. They said they had been driving near Ririe, Idaho when something seemed to land on the roof of their car. Then, as they put it, "a power bigger than they could cope with" forced them off the road. They leaped out of their vehicle and were astounded to see a saucer-shaped object perched on the roof. Two men, both "about three feet tall," appeared and addressed them in some incomprehensible language. Unable to communicate, the little men finally got back into the object and flew off.

These things have been going on largely unnoticed for years. Whatever these objects are, they not only can paralyze people, but they can also cause automobiles to stall. They can jam radios and knock telephones out. They have even reportedly picked up trucks from highways and hoisted them into the air. Local police have found themselves totally helpless when a UFO flap hits their area. And they haven't been able to find anyone in the federal government who will even listen to their tales of horror. Deputy Sheriff A.N. Perkins and Patrolman C.F. Bell of Williston, FL claimed that they were engulfed with an intolerable wave of heat and became temporarily paralyzed as a group of objects flew over a line of stalled autos on Dec. 5, 1966. Other police officers have claimed that they reached for their guns to fire on "flying saucers," yet found themselves unable to pull their weapons from their holsters.

One of the many apparent patterns emerging from this mass of data is the consistent reappearance of the objects in the same isolated, thinly populated areas year after year. These sectors, known as "flap areas," have become inundated with other bizarre problems in the last two years. Giant "prowlers" or "peeping Toms," always described as being at least six-feet, six-inches tall with shiny silver hair, have sparked police searches all over the country. Identical "prowlers" have appeared in West Virginia, Massachusetts, Florida, and in New York State. Farmers in New York's Delaware County have been pursuing these elusive giants with shotguns. They soberly describe how the "prowlers" are able to run with incredible swiftness in total darkness, and seem to leap over high obstructions with astounding ease.

In Ohio, the author was told similar stories of "cattle rustlers" in shiny white coveralls, who performed feats of running and jumping that were impossible for a human being. Local law enforcement officials everywhere have been perturbed over the sharp increase in "cattle rustling" in "flap areas" in Florida, Ohio, and other states. Often the mutilated carcasses of the animals are found drained of blood. One cow was found in Ohio in December of 1967, cleanly cut in half "as if it had been snipped by a giant pair of scissors." These UFO "cattle rustlers" never leave any footprints or other clues behind.

After a futile search for footprints and truck tracks, a sheriff's deputy in Florida asked ufologist Joan Whritenour, "Just where does a rustler put a full-grown cow? Sure as hell not in his back pocket!"

In the fall of 1967, the story of Snippy, a horse found mutilated in Colorado, was given considerable newspaper space. But there have been hundreds of "Snippys" in the past few years. And hundreds – if not thousands – of dogs have also disappeared or been found inexplicably dead and bloodless in "flap areas." Mutilated animals have also turned up in Canada and South America. In Condona, Peru, a farmer named Alphonso Perez reported that six of his prize heifers had been slaughtered in the spring of 1968 by parties unknown. Veterinarians who examined the carcasses said the animals had slit throats, and the wounds appeared to have been cauterized. The blood had been drained from all of them (or had dried up inside). Old fashioned, western-style cattle rustlers often butchered animals in the field, but they made off with the prize steak cuts, not the blood or soft tissue.

It looks as if UFOs are interested in, or have a serious need for, animal blood.

But what about human blood?

Here's a case that may offer a clue. Early on a rainy morning in March 1967, a Red Cross Bloodmobile, laden with fresh blood collected from human volunteers, was driving along Route 2, next to the Ohio River, en route to Red Cross headquarters in Huntington, West Virginia. The driver was Beau Shertzer, 21. He was accompanied by a young nurse. As they hit a completely deserted stretch of road, a large glowing object lifted from a nearby hill and sailed silently toward the vehicle. Shertzer rolled down his window and looked up.

He was panic-stricken to see some kind of arm or extension being lowered from the glistening machine, which was cruising only a few feet above his bloodmobile. The nurse looked out her window and saw another arm reaching down on her side of the truck. It looked as if the flying saucer was trying to wrap a pincer-like device around the vehicle. The nurse went into hysterics, understandably, and Shertzer opened the engine up wide, trying desperately to outrun the thing. Apparently they were saved by the sudden appearance of headlights from oncoming traffic. As the other cars neared, the object retracted the arms and hastily flew off.

To this day, Beau Shertzer refuses to drive along that highway.

Other puzzling incidents have had far more serious consequences. One man died of drowning after jumping into Lake Maracaibo, Venezuela together with dozens of other terrified fisherman, when a huge luminous object flew low over them on Oct. 6, 1961. Another man, Francis Bedel, Jr., lost control of his car five miles north of Freetown, Indiana on the night of Jan. 17, 1967, when a bright glowing object swooped out of the sky and made a low-level approach. Bedel's car swerved off the highway and ended up in a creek, badly damaged.

There are growing numbers of cases in which innocent people have been badly burned, blinded, or given a near-lethal dose of radiation poisoning by the mysterious objects. "Sonny" Desvergers, a scoutmaster, was reportedly burned and knocked unconscious by a "ball of fire" that came from a circular object near Boynton Beach, FL in August of 1952. Desvergers said there was the "smell of rotten eggs" around the object. The Air Force said his whole story was a hoax.

A young boy near Hobbs, NM, Charles Davis, was "burned bald" by a low-

flying UFO on June 2, 1964. His grandmother saw the object shoot away as the boy screamed with pain. His face began to swell until his eyes were closed, and his ears "looked like pieces of raw meat." Another child, an 11-yr. old girl, was allegedly burned in an identical manner by "a flying ashtray" near Oklahoma City, OK in the fall of 1964. When Robert Stiff, a local ufologist, tried to investigate the case, he found the Air Force had whisked the girl away to a military hospital. He was never able to get to the bottom of the story.

A 45-yr. old woman near Fleming, NY was struck by a "ball of fire" from a UFO while riding in a car in the spring of 1966. She was hospitalized and remained partially paralyzed for weeks afterwards. But one of the severest of all "burn" cases took place in Canada on May 20, 1967. Steve Michalak, 52, was gathering rock samples near a place called Falcon Lake when he blundered upon a circular object that looked like stainless steel.

He watched it land, he claims, and heard voices coming from it. He called out but received no reply, so he walked up to the thing and actually touched it. As he did so, the disc began to revolve and a blast of heat struck him, burning his chest under his clothes, leaving an odd checkerboard pattern. He became ill immediately and has not been well since, apparently suffering with all the symptoms of radiation poisoning. His case has been thoroughly investigated by both Canadian and American scientists and medical men.

A 12-yr. old boy named Gregory Wells became involved in this undercover nightmare on March 19, 1968. Gregory had gone outside his home near Beallsville, OH to get a thermos jug of water. Suddenly a reddish, football-shaped object appeared low over the trees, making a noise like a generator. A tube projected from the object and flashed a beam of red light at the boy, knocking him to the ground and setting his jacket aflame. A local investigator for APRO, Dennis Jones, filed a careful report in which he said he felt the witnesses involved were "telling merely what they saw." He felt that "Gregory was telling the truth." Young Wells required serious medical attention.

A beam of light from an object "as big as a baseball diamond" paralyzed and partially deafened another Ohio boy on Aug. 19, 1966. Chris Ward, 14, and three young friends were camping out in sleeping bags on the back porch of a home in East Liverpool, OH, when around 12:40 a.m., Ryan Reed, 12, woke up and became aware of something hovering over the porch. He woke up the others and they excitedly left the porch to watch the enormous object hanging

low over the house. Suddenly a beam of light shot out from underneath the craft, striking Ward and rendering him immobile.

Terror swept over the small group. The others grabbed Chris, but found they couldn't move him. It was as if he were rooted to the spot. The object turned bright red and shot upwards. As it disappeared eastward, Chris was able to move again – and move he did. All four boys scrambled desperately around to the front of the house. Chris had the key to the front door, and he twisted it in the lock so violently that it actually broke in two.

Police lieutenant Kenneth Mooney and Patrolman James Buckley later said that the boys were genuinely terrified by whatever they had seen. Dozens of people, including several policemen, reported seeing a "huge fireball" blazing across the sky shortly after the boys' sighting. Chris Ward's face was partially numb, he complained, and his hearing was impaired for several hours after his experience with the "beam of light."

All of these incidents indicate that the "flying saucers" are engaged in activities far more complex and searching than a mere "aerial survey" of our planet. It is also clear that they have a need for both human beings and animals. There are hundreds of cases of open and deliberate hostility. The objects and their occupants have rather pointlessly injured innumerable people, pursued or attacked thousands of others, and ruthlessly raided our pastures and farms.

The UFO weaponry is awesome. They can paralyze and immobilize both machines and human beings, and they can somehow tamper with the human mind.

But why do they seem to be preoccupied with children and teenagers? Where are all of the disappearing people going? We only hear about the ones who get away from their abductors. There are undoubtedly thousands of incredible cases that have never been reported to anyone.

As of now, isolated sheriffs and police authorities scattered around the country are fighting a lonely battle, trying to cope with an unseen and dangerous enemy. Thousands of people in small towns and villages are afraid to go out alone at night, terrified of what may be lurking in their once placid skies.

Air Force jets do pursue the objects at every opportunity. When a flap broke out around Columbus, OH in the spring of 1968, the Air Force was on the job,

scrambling fighters, trying to seek out these strange will-o'-the-wisps that appear and disappear almost magically.

But how can you fight a thing that can freeze your limbs and blank out your mind? Perhaps the best advice, for now at least, can be found in the words of a sheriff in South Carolina, who has been living with this nightmare for over a year.

"All we can do is keep our windows and doors locked," he said. "And don't go joy-riding late at night. There's something out there, alright, but we're like a bunch of kids trying to hunt an elephant with a bean-shooter."

CHAPTER 20

OCEAN-BASED UFOS RING THE UNITED STATES – MALE MAGAZINE, DEC. 1970

Early on the morning of June 11, 1970, an eerie luminous sphere appeared in the skies over the Atlantic Ocean, and cruised silently past the tiny papyrus reed boat Ra 2, manned by explorer Thor Heyerdahl and a small crew. "It was in sight for several minutes," navigator Norman Baker reported by radio, "and then it vanished in a bright orange flash."

The Ra 2 was attempting to cross the Atlantic to prove Heyerdahl's theory that ancient Egyptians could have visited the New World centuries before Columbus. An earlier expedition in a similar craft, the Ra 1, had been aborted in 1969 when the ship had been engulfed in a storm and sprang a leak.

When Baker's message reached the North American Air Defense Command (NORAD) at Colorado Springs, CO, a spokesman said that the object could not have been connected with a space shot, but that "it might have been a meteor." However, it is highly unlikely that the seasoned sailors aboard the Ra 2 would have mistaken a meteor or other natural object for an unidentified flying something. Besides, Thor Heyerdahl had seen and reported UFOs before, during the historic voyage of his raft Kon Tiki across the Pacific several years ago.

Unidentified flying objects have been sighted consistently by the crews of hundreds of ships all over the Atlantic Ocean. In many well-documented cases, witnesses have claimed that strange metallic saucer-shaped and cigar-shaped objects have suddenly surfaced from beneath the waters, risen into the air, circled their ships, and flown off into the stars. In other cases, flying objects have descended to the surface of the ocean and disappeared underneath.

There are still other baffling cases of gigantic "mystery submarines" that apparently do not belong to any known nation. They have successfully eluded massive searches by sea and air launched by the navies of several nations. All of these reports have generated one of the most popular and persistent legends in the "flying saucer" mystery – that UFOs are actually based underwater in the

Atlantic, Pacific, and Arctic Oceans. An extension of these legends is the claim that "Lost Atlantis" still survives, and that there are huge, technologically advanced cities existing in the oceans.

While the existence of Atlantis will always remain a subject for scholarly debate, the innumerable sighting reports of reputable captains and crews indicates that mysterious aircraft and ships seem to have some intangible relationship with the world's major sea-lanes.

The first known Atlantic sighting is found in the log of Christopher Columbus himself. On the night of Oct. 11, 1492, a few hours before land was finally sighted, Columbus and other members of his crew reportedly watched a strange light bobbing up and down in the distance, following the now-traditional "falling leaf" motion of UFOs. Columbus' crew was uneasy and in a state of rebellion after their long and seemingly futile voyage. They regarded the mysterious light as a hopeful omen and, sure enough, land appeared on the horizon the next day (in the same vicinity as the unknown and never-explained light).

When traffic between Europe and North America increased in the 19th century, sightings of UFOs multiplied dramatically. In some of these cases, the now-familiar UFO effects of sudden rises in temperature, blinding headaches, and conjunctivitis (eyes burned by ultraviolet rays from the objects) were noted.

The Captain of the British steamer Flamborough was temporarily blinded and suffered a "considerable pain in his head" after viewing a brilliant flying object off the coast of Maine on Nov. 18, 1887. Others were reporting weird "globes of fire" flying in formation, and luminous, circular "clouds." Sometimes the pungent smell of rotten eggs (hydrogen sulfide) was mentioned in these early reports. Dark spheres and seemingly metallic objects plummeted into the waters near ships, or rose suddenly out of the water to fly away.

"It looked like two balls, one very black and the other brightly illuminated," Capt. Swart of the Dutch ship JPA wrote of his sighting of March 19, 1887. "The latter fell, and as it seemed that it would strike the vessel, she was hove-to under storm sails… Immediately afterwards, solid lumps of ice fell on the deck, and the decks and rigging became coated with an icy crust… On the side of the vessel where 'the meteor' fell into the water, the ship appeared all black, and some of the copper sheathing was blistered."

Captain Swart's experience, and a large percentage of all the known Atlantic sightings, occurred in a section west of Bermuda. Although this particular area has become known as "the Bermuda Triangle," it is actually oval-shaped, and encompasses thousands of square miles from Bermuda to Florida. Thor Heyerdahl's Ra 2 was passing into this mysterious region when they sighted their UFO.

A British sailor named John Fairfax is another visitor to the Bermuda Triangle who had a strange, almost mystical experience in the spring of 1969. Fairfax was sailing across the Atlantic alone, when he reportedly observed two brilliant lights on the horizon. They separated and flew higher into the sky and, as he watched, he claims he entered a motionless trance state. He had the uncomfortable feeling, he said, that someone or something was asking him if he wanted to join them. The lights finally disappeared among the stars. Such "trances" are commonly reported in land-based cases, also. The witnesses are often in automobiles when "flying saucers" approach them and somehow induce a state of paralysis.

Perhaps Fairfax is one of the lucky few that got away, for the Bermuda Triangle has acquired a sinister reputation. Since 1840, no less than 70 ships and 40 airplanes have vanished without a trace there, along with passengers and crewmen totaling more than 1,100. Massive searches have failed to detect any debris or sign of the missing craft. But, in several instances, the missing ships were later found in perfect condition, without any sign of their crews or any indication of what had happened to them. In June and July of 1969, five abandoned ships were found adrift in the Triangle. One of these was John Crowhurst's small sailboat, and therein lies another strange saga of the sea.

Crowhurst was purportedly participating in a round-the-world yachting race from England, but the diaries found aboard his craft told a bizarre story of deliberate fraud. He did not even attempt to circle the globe, but merely circled the Arctic instead. His diary described strange "hallucinations," sightings of sea monsters, and things in the sky. When his boat was found, it was in perfect order. A dismantled radio was found carefully laid out on the deck where he had apparently been repairing it, so theories of his having been washed overboard during a storm were discounted. The only thing missing among his effects was a movie camera. A board of inquiry concluded that he had suffered pangs of conscience, and could not go through with his scheme for winning fame, and a substantial prize, by claiming to be the winner in the

round-the-world race. So, on the last lap of his trip, he decided to drown himself. This, however, does not explain why he decided to take his movie camera with him.

Students of the paranormal are speculating that, like Fairfax, Crowhurst may have received an "invitation" from a light in the sky. The last entry in his diary indicates that he was drowned or disappeared on June 24th, 1969. June 24th has special significance to mystery-watchers. Private pilot Kenneth Arnold made his historic sighting of nine "flying saucers" on June 24, 1947, and there has been a long chain of important UFO and occult events on that date.

Ufologists are now becoming aware of specific "flying saucer" routes spread around the world. The objects seem to follow these routes year after year, century after century. One of the most active of these routes originates in the Arctic Circle, looping down over Spitsbergen, Greenland and into the Bermuda Triangle. Sightings along these routes have become so commonplace that you need full-time use of a computer to keep track of them. Dozens of nations are involved. But the historical records show that scholars were aware of these routes thousands of years ago. In ancient China, the mysterious lights in the sky were often regarded as "dragons," and Chinese historians noted that they followed regular paths across China. In fact, real estate along these "dragon routes" was especially valuable since the early Chinese considered them to be lucky areas. Modern-day researchers have traced these dragon paths across Asia and northern Europe, and have found that they coincide exactly with the routes followed by modern UFOs.

The Scandinavian countries have been besieged by UFOs for years. The chilly waters around Norway, Finland, Sweden, and Denmark have produced a fascinating stream of reports describing gigantic submarines of unknown origin, huge unmarked airplanes (in 1934!), and a wide variety of puzzling lights. One such report came from the crew of the Russian ship Izhevsk as it was crossing the Norwegian Sea on August 2, 1967.

"There were three of us in the cabin – Capt. Markov, Senior Engineer Ivanov, and myself," First Mate Bazhazhin told Dr. Felix Zigel, Assistant Professor of Moscow Aviation Institute.

> The navigator on duty reported a strange phenomenon in the sky. We ran to the bridge and saw a sphere-like whitish spot moving

> southward. It was 11:30 p.m. Moscow time. A few minutes later, a bright spot flared up high in the sky. For a couple of seconds, it rushed headlong from west to east at an angle of 45 degrees to the Earth, getting much larger. Suddenly it came to a stop and, with a play of bright rainbow colors (yellow predominating), began throwing off sparks and became enveloped in a white shroud.
>
> Once again the sphere-like white nebula began moving south. The procedure was repeated four times. On the fifth and last time, the spot's behavior changed. It stopped midway, turned over, and assumed the shape of an egg with the thicker end up. Then a powerful white jet squirted from the lower end, after which the "egg" grew pale, became enveloped in white mist and, with its white tail, began to head southward. All of this was visible for an hour and then vanished into thin air.

"Vanished into thin air…" This phrase appears again and again in the UFO reports of the past 100 years.

The crew of the fishing boat Fram described the sudden disappearance of a strange giant airplane off the coast of Norway on Feb. 11, 1937. The Fram was circling a cape near Kvalsvik, Norway at 9 p.m. when they sighted the plane resting on the water. Thinking the craft might be in trouble, the captain changed his course and headed for it. Red and green lights were visible on the machine but, as the boat approached, the lights suddenly went out, and the object was enveloped in a cloud of smoke. It disappeared, almost magically.

In more recent years, there has been an epidemic of disappearing submarines all over the world. They do not seem to belong to the Soviet Union or the United States. Reliable, trained observers such as pilots and sea captains have described these objects maneuvering in shallow waters (where no sensible submarine would dare venture). The navies of New Zealand, Australia, Argentina, and Venezuela have turned out in force, thinking they had trapped the mystery subs within their territorial waters. But the objects always manage to elude their pursuers.

One such submarine turned up north of Stockholm on Sept. 13, 1969. It was first sighted by a Finnish ferryboat near Norrtalje. Then a boatman on the

island of Hamtan spotted it. Swedish authorities became upset, because the unidentified submarine was obviously headed into "the prohibited military sector of Bjorko-Arholma." Planes, ships, and troops were rushed to the area, and an extensive search was held. No trace of the object was ever found.

Two months later, the trawler Silvero collided with an unknown underwater object near Halsingland, shortly after the helmsman observed a mysterious light on the water. Again, a search failed to discover the source of the collision. The trawler went into dry dock for repairs and was found to be badly damaged below the waterline. Another ship, the Insulanur, collided with an underwater object near Sydosbrotten on Nov. 19, 1969, the day before the Silvero incident. That collision was equally mysterious.

In the past two years, six submarines belonging to Israel, France, England, and the U.S. have all disappeared without a trace. Three of these vanished in the Mediterranean Sea. Very thorough searches by air and sea have failed to reveal their fate. No oil slicks or debris have been found.

The French submarine Eurydice and its crew of 57 was the latest to vanish on March 4, 1970. A Tunisian tanker, Tabarka, collided with an underwater object around the same time, but authorities discounted that it could have been the Eurydice. In February 1970, the Angelino Lauro, an Italian liner, was damaged when it ran into something in the Mediterranean.

Again, the metallic objects involved in these collisions have never been identified. Modern submarines are well equipped, with Sonar and other detection devices, and are not likely to crash into surface ships so frequently. If they did, they would suffer extensive damage themselves, spewing out great quantities of oil and debris, and would have to surface.

As with UFOs, our mysterious submarines have a history going back more than forty years. A group of fisherman in Morecambe Bay, England reported one such oddity in March 1938. "I saw a sudden scurry of seabirds rise off the water," witness William Baxter told the Liverpool Echo (March 29, 1938), "and I looked at a spot nearly a mile away. Out of the water there rose something large and black, like a big post. It was at least eight or nine feet high, and it rose and fell three times, then disappeared. I've been all over the world, but I have never seen anything like this!"

There were more than 40 reports of non-existent airplanes crashing into the sea

in 1938, mostly in the northern latitudes around England and Scandinavia. As usual, searches failed to locate debris or survivors, and no planes were reported missing. First Mate Robert Wake of the collier Birtley described one such "airplane crash" in April 1938.

"When it struck the water, there was a sudden burst of flame that lit up the whole sky. The mass of flames rapidly dwindled to three small patches of light, and in another minute there was complete darkness. We steamed ahead with all possible speed, but there was no sign of wreckage," Wake said (Daily Telegraph, April 7, 1938).

Meteors do not explode into flames when they hit the water. What was it? We'll never know.

These "crashing airplane" reports continue to come in at a steady rate. Many are now accompanied by mysterious radio signals that clearly indicate that an intelligent technology is involved in these incidents. Radio signals also accompanied the "ghost fliers" over Scandinavia in 1934. Many people picked the signals up on their home receivers.

In the past year, divers operating off the coast of England have been puzzled by the strange sounds they have been hearing underwater (water is an excellent conductor of sound). They have reported hearing voices and even music, and have been unable to determine the source. Fish in the same areas have been meeting untimely ends, some appearing to have been burned!

The evidence is mounting, and it becomes more and more perplexing. Our world is not only haunted by all kinds of bizarre aerial objects (many of which have demonstrated their ability to dive into the water and apparently turn into submarines), but we are also plagued by a wide variety of ocean-based mysteries. Somebody or something seems to be collecting people in the Bermuda Triangle. Now it looks as if they – or it – may be collecting conventional submarines as well. All of these incredible events refute the popular belief that flying saucers represent friendly visitors from outer space.

Instead, the history of the phenomenon and its multifarious activities point to an even more illogical conclusion. The phenomenon seems to be terrestrial, and it seems based, in large part, under our oceans and seas. Are we dealing with some phantom navy from some secret underwater world? Is this why the U.S. Navy has spent more money on UFOs than the U.S. Air Force?

In 1967, the Navy reportedly spent $5 million on a project to “search the Bermuda Triangle” with planes and special research submarines.

In 1969, we quietly launched the NR-1, a nuclear submarine that carries a 7-man crew and cost $100 million. This sub is cloaked in secrecy, but the Navy says it is designed “to explore commercial and military possibilities of the ocean floor.”

Have all the UFO enthusiasts been looking in the wrong direction?

CHAPTER 21

WAS PHILIP K. DICK A FLAKE? – NEW FRONTIERS MAGAZINE, 1987

Some readers might complain that the following article is written in the manner of a New York Times Book Review piece. That is, the book reviewer usually devotes eight thousand words to telling what he knows about the subject at hand, thus proving that his knowledge is vastly superior to anyone else's. Then, if the book author is lucky, the reviewer devotes the last paragraph of the review to the book (usually sniggering, sneering, and dismissing it altogether).

In my book The Eighth Tower, I quote the following story:

> It was after midnight in the spring of 1872, and a hansom carriage moved slowly through the fog of Sherlock Holmes' London. Young Richard Maurice Bucke sat erect in a quiet, meditative mood, his shoulders rocking with the uneven movements of the carriage wheels over the worn cobble-stones. Suddenly, as he would recall later, a flame-colored cloud seemed to sweep over him. At first, he thought the city was on fire. Then the luminous cloud seemed to enter his body, and lightning bolts crackled in his brain. For a brief moment, he felt he was one with the universe, and all knowledge – past, present and future – ricocheted in the corners of his mind, and he felt different. Changed somehow.

Dr. Bucke went on to become one of Canada's most distinguished psychiatrists. And he was the first to attempt a study of the strange phenomenon that had engulfed him in that London fog. Then, in 1901, he slipped on the ice and bashed in his head. But not before he produced the classic book, Cosmic Consciousness, which is still in print.

Now we skip ahead to the year 1948. An l8-year-old boy, fresh from a farm, is living in a cheap furnished room a couple of blocks from Times Square in New York City. In the middle of the night, he is awakened by a weird feeling. His room is filled with an indescribable light – a pinkish glow that leads him to think the building is on fire. Before he can move, his mind is flooded with a

torrent of information. Miraculously, he understands everything. All that has happened, all that will happen and the total meaning of it all! Excited though he is, he falls asleep again. The next morning he remembers the event vividly. It is seared into his mind. But the information is all lost. He can't remember any of it. As the years pass he will realize that it was entered into his subconscious mind and small portions will bubble to the surface from time to time.

I was that 18-year old boy. For many years, I never mentioned the incident to anyone, although the incident was so resplendent that I thought of it often. It wasn't until the 1960s that I discovered other people had shared the same experience. In fact, it is probable that it happens to millions of people in each generation. It is known under many different names: enlightenment, mystical illumination, cosmic illumination, etc. Many modern percipients are misled into thinking it is about being "born again." Others think of it as "the call," and they join priesthoods.

Still others, often people of humble station, quit their jobs, dump their families, and adopt a whole new way of life, becoming famous leaders in the arts, politics, and religion. The one thing that becomes clear when you study this process is that a fairly large percentage of the human race is overtly manipulated by this "Illumination," and that they lead the rest of humanity into future events – often calamitous in nature – that seem pre-planned.

Religion makes a feeble effort to explain this manipulation. Men have been aware of it since they sat in caves and whittled calendars on bones. Whole civilizations have risen and collapsed because of this awareness. The source of this manipulation seems to be unknowable and indefinable. So, mankind has devised a long series of anthropomorphic demons and gods to share the blame. Since earliest times, we have chopped out living hearts and waged horribly brutal wars as part of this manipulation. At this very moment, several religious wars are raging on this pathetic mudball of ours.

Victims of Illumination often suffer "static," and the whole process misfires. Those who deliberately seek to communicate with "the Force," as George Lucas dubbed it, usually end up as suicides, or they get hit by a truck. Those who draw circles on the floor, light black candles and wave swords around always come to a tragic end. The lamas in the Himalayas discovered that it takes many years of effort to attain Illumination. The successful adept becomes a zombie in much the same way religious fanatics everywhere become totally

consumed. They sacrifice their individuality for a state of happy mindlessness.

Science-fiction writers have dabbled with all this for many years, grinding out half-baked books loosely based on scholarly misinterpretations of phenomenological literature. The sword and sorcery stories form a complete genre. Modern fantasy pays grudging acknowledgement to a very real period in early history, when men understood the magical forces surrounding them – a time when magic was the true science of its day.

Even some science-fiction writers have been zapped by that big searchlight in the sky. The late Philip K. Dick (PKD) wrote extensively and obsessively about a mind-widening experience. His cult novel VALIS, one of his last works, published by Bantam in 1981, described how a rather unlikable hero named Fat wandered through the Twilight Zone.

> I tell you these things for what they are worth. They are true things; they happened.
>
> In fat's opinion, his apartment had been saturated with high levels of radiation of some kind. In fact, he had seen it: blue light dancing like St. Elmo's fire.
>
> And what was more, the aurora that sizzled around the apartment behaved as if it were sentient and alive. When it entered objects, it interfered with their causal processes. And when it reached Fat's head, it transferred not just information to him, but also a personality – a personality that wasn't Fat's, with different memories, customs, tastes, and habits. (VALIS, p. 94)

The question before us is simple. Was PKD a flake? He spent the last eight years of his life talking and writing about his "religious experience." He had learned the true meaning of the ancient phrase, "He has seen the light." Was he just a plain nut? Had he been reading my books and articles? Was he into drugs?

> God, he told us, had fired a beam of pink light directly at him, at his head, his eyes; Fat had been temporarily blinded, and his head had ached for days. It was easy, he said, to describe the beam of pink light: it's exactly what you get as a phosphene after-image when a flashbulb has gone off in your face. Fat was

> spiritually haunted by that color. He lived for that light, that one particular color.
>
> However, he could never really find it again. Nothing could generate that color for light, but god. In other words, normal light did not contain that color. One time Fat studied a color chart, a chart of the visible spectrum. The color was absent. He had seen a color that no one can see; it lay off the end. (VALIS, p. 12)

It does sound as if PKD may have had personal experience with the dazzling light that has now been reported by countless UFO contactees, angel witnesses (there are thousands of reports of angels each year), and chimera sighters. The visible spectrum goes from red at one end of the scale to purple at the other end. Beyond these we have infrared and ultraviolet. Some humans are able to perceive those "invisible colors" and peek into the edges of a whole universe that is hidden from the rest of us. That may be the universe that gleefully manipulates us into charging into battle to spew our guts all over the landscape. It is also a universe that grinds away endless propaganda like a broken phonograph to generation after generation of prophets, seers, contactees and, in the 1980s, channelers.

In a letter written on May 20, 1977, PKD reveals that his mind was picking up signals from that broken phonograph, like most contactees and spiritualists. "Meanwhile I was shaping my cosmology," he wrote. "When it finally took form in March of 1974, I understood, noetically, that two opposing forces, powers, sides, or entities contended in our world, using it as a gameboard or battlefield. Intellectually, I could then identify these two absolute forces with the two forces I had formerly seen as mundane: my foe, which became identified with the Sons of Darkness, and my friends, the Sons of Light…to use Zoroaster's terms. I had been part of a cosmic struggle acted out on our Earth. It was a struggle, taking place in the arena of human history. Evidently I was a Son of Light, who had come here, forgotten his origin, identity, and purpose, but regained memory and understanding of all this after I had done my work… I remembered who I was, why I was here, and I experienced my true father, whom I call the programmer."

The programmer! Was PKD just ranting, or was he standing on the edge of one universe and peering into another with greater perception and lucidity than

most contactees, channelers, and spiritual ding-a-lings?

Philip K. Dick lived a tortured, paranoia-filled life, hounded by the IRS and the other cruel forces of the 1970s. He may have also (wittingly or unwittingly) summoned up the Sons of Darkness. While I can find no direct references to it, his writings hint that he may have been flirting with pentagrams and sword-waving in darkened rooms.

In 1970, his home was broken into and high explosives were used to blast open his filing cabinets (which were unlocked at the time). He fled for his life, hiding out for some time from some mysterious enemy. The FBI, under J. Edgar Hoover, was performing all kinds of atrocities against normal, innocent citizens during that period.

Following the military coup of 1963 (JFK's assassination), we were all living in an Orwellian police state.

Everybody's phone was tapped, or so it seemed. Everybody's mail was being tampered with. (The CIA has acknowledged intercepting at least one letter Philip K. Dick sent, to a Soviet scientist, in the 1950s.)

The pointless bloodbath in Vietnam was steadily escalating… The "Black Iron Prison" Philip K. Dick had warned us about seemed to be becoming a reality…

And then, the "New Age" (a planned diversion?) suddenly came upon us, and Ouija Boards were outselling Monopoly sets.

CHAPTER 22

THE SECRET TAPE TO THE CONGRESS OF SCIENTIFIC UFOLOGISTS – CHARLESTON, WV 1969

The following is not to be reproduced in any fashion… This tape is intended only for the Closed Session of the 1969 Congress of Scientific Ufologists at Charleston, West Virginia…

This is John Keel in New York City, June 1969. I regret that I am unable to attend this year's convention; but my three-year safari into the never-never land of flying saucers will soon be ended. From here on, my main efforts will be devoted to historical studies and statistical surveys.

Some of my controversial conclusions have already been published; other basic material that I have collected will soon appear in London's Flying Saucer Review and other periodicals… My book, Operation Trojan Horse, which fully outlines all of my investigations, evidence, and conclusions, will probably appear late this fall.

I have personally investigated approximately 600 cases in total depth. Now, I am not talking about sightings; I've investigated thousands of those. I am talking about cases where a definite manifestation occurred. I began with the belief that flying saucers were most probably the product of an advanced technology from some other planet. But by the end of 1966, I realized that the evidence I had collected pointed to another, far more complicated answer. I will try to explain here a few of my basic conclusions.

First of all, the quantity, scope, frequency, and distribution of the UFO sightings automatically rule out any possibility that the objects could conceivably be of extraterrestrial origin. They are seen year after year, in the same areas, going back as far as 1896. We can trace the sightings even further back. If you collect all the known sightings for any given area, you will find that this basic factor is true.

Huntington, West Virginia, for example, has a long history of UFO sightings, going back to the early 1800s. The phenomenon has been consistent throughout the Midwest for centuries. The Indians had many legends about the "Sky

People" going back long before the white settlers arrived. This means that the phenomenon has been an environmental factor in those window areas for a very long time. Countries such as Sweden, Norway, Ireland, China, and Japan have always recognized the existence of unusual aerial phenomena. UFO-type events are mentioned in their earliest historical records. These records indicate that the UFOs did not represent occasional visitants but, in actuality, originated in some manner in these areas.

The subject of UFOs assumed no particular importance until 1934, when an enormous flap developed in Scandinavia. Officials in Sweden, Norway, and Finland became concerned because the objects occurred in great numbers over military areas, forts, railways, naval harbors, and other places considered to be of strategic importance. In the past few months, Scandinavian researchers have unearthed hundreds of newspaper reports from 1934. Military spokesmen and officials of that period confirmed the reality of these reports. In 1936 and 1937, there were scores of "weird light" sightings, many of the most sensational nature.

We are now slowly building up a mass of files of those aerial reports, and find that they conform precisely to the modern UFO sightings. Further back, there were intensive flaps in 1846, 1850, 1866, and so on, including numerous contactee events. The deeper we dig into history, the more we find that these things have always been going on. These events are not governed by the proximity of Mars or some other planet; they are commonplace and consistent throughout history. But they are very rarely recorded, and that is the whole key to our problem. Unfortunately, only a handful of researchers have been willing to undertake the tedious work necessary to locate these early reports in the newspaper files. It will be a long time before we can finally assemble the complete picture but, at this point, it does look as if UFOs are part of a large pattern encompassing the whole world…

The objects appear to be a complex phenomenon: intelligently controlled, yet paraphysical, comprised of energies of a different order. Some can seemingly defy gravity and travel faster than sound without producing sonic booms… The majority are merely transmogrifications; they exist only temporarily, as illusions – momentary condensations of energy. They may come from beyond our space-time continuum, but not from beyond our atmosphere or planetary format. They are like ghosts, bound to the earth, but mostly invisible to us. Occasionally, they enter the narrow spectrum of human vision and become

temporarily visible. This process is fully explained in the Bible and many other ancient references. It is explained again and again to each new contactee. And there are thousands and thousands of contactees that you never hear about.

I have reason to believe high officials in the U.S. government ascertained the nature of the UFO phenomenon in 1946, a full year before the events of Maury Island and the Kenneth Arnold sightings. In 1946, Scandinavia experienced another, better known flap, and these appeared in the very same areas that had been engulfed 12 years prior, in 1934. A considerable amount of revival UFO data was collected during WWII and in 1946. This data was probably sufficient to lead to the conclusion that the UFO "orb" phenomenon was paraphysical and, thus, practically impossible to explain to the public.

How could any president or general explain to the public that UFOs were invisible emanations from this planet itself? They couldn't, and they didn't try. Between 1950 and 1955, the RAF in England conducted an exhaustive study of flying saucers. In April 1955, an RAF spokesman told the press that the study was complete, but that the official conclusion would not be made public, because that would only create more controversy (and could not be completely proven).

However, Air Marshal Lord Dowding, the man who led the RAF during the Battle of Britain, gave a series of lectures in 1955, in which he announced that the UFO occupants were immortal, could render themselves invisible to us, and could even walk and work amongst us without being noticed. The UFO organizations of the period ignored his main statements and extracted a few lines out of context, in which he discussed the possibility of extraterrestrial origin. By the time of his death, Lord Dowding had completely rejected the extraterrestrial hypothesis. That same year, 1955, Kenneth Arnold issued public statements in which he also repudiated the ET Thesis, and suggested that UFOs were really living forms of energy. Was he a nut? He was so nutty that he was actually nominated for Lieutenant-Governor of Idaho...

On May 3rd of this year, RAF Air Marshal Sir Victor Goddard gave a lecture at Caxton Hall in London. Victor is of cabinet rank, and was involved in the RAF's UFO investigations in the early 1950s. He said, "While it may be that some operators of UFOs are normally the paraphysical denizens of a planet other than Earth, there is no logical need for this to be so. If UFOs are paraphysical and, consequently, normally invisible, UFOs could plausibly be

creations of an invisible world more coincident with the physical space of Earth than with any other planets." He obviously had reasons for believing that UFOs were invisible and paraphysical. Perhaps it was this realization that led President Eisenhower to tell the press in 1954 that flying saucers exist only in the minds of observers. So far as the hard physical scientists are concerned, UFOs do not exist at all. They have never left behind any substantial artifacts.

UFOs have appeared and disappeared suddenly in front of Air Force pilots, astronomers, physicists, and even me. The Russian cosmonauts described them as "marvelous phantasms." That may be as good a description as any. In my travels, I discovered an amazing thing: some people could see these marvelous phantasms, and some could not. More than once, I have stood with a group of people in an open field, and watched a low-flying UFO glide silently past. Some of us could clearly see the object in great detail. When we compared notes later, we had all seen the same thing. But others in the group saw absolutely nothing. They thought we were crazy, or were putting them on. Sir Victor offered the following explanation for this peculiar phenomenon:

> Paraphysicality is observable by people with "second sight" (paraphysical perception) and by people who normally lack that faculty but – through the influence of the [second-sighters] – are "enabled" to sharpen their perception to the point of "seeing." Paraphysicality is imaginable to the point of supposed observation. This tends to frustrate the real validity of both groups.

What he is trying to say there is something I've discovered and have written about. A lot of people didn't understand it. That is, people who see exceptional UFOs close up – contactees, in particular – have all the same characteristics as people who have supernatural experiences (i.e., psychics and transmediums). The two types are identical. The manifestations differ slightly, but the basics – the personal histories of contactees and psychics – are the same. Therefore, we are forced to assume that it takes a special kind of person to perceive these objects close up – to have a genuine experience with them.

Now, if these assumptions are correct, then we must reluctantly concede that the government has been telling us the truth all along, and that UFOs do not represent an advanced technology, nor do they come from other planets or pose a threat to national security.

They do sometimes pose a threat to individuals. But we cannot say, and will never be able to say – or prove – that they pose a threat to national security. The evidence to support the aforementioned conclusions is overwhelming. It fills whole libraries, but the UFO buffs have been blinded by belief and devotion to a cause. They have not studied the whole, but a tiny part of the whole. They began with a premise that flying saucers were real and were extraterrestrial. The UFO organizations actually censored and suppressed cases that tended to prove otherwise.

We must make a completely fresh start. It is absolutely impossible to prove that flying saucers are real and extraterrestrial; if it were possible, someone would have done it a long, long time ago. What we must do now is completely reassess the situation and admit all of the previously inadmissible evidence. We must collect all the details of all manifestations that surround UFO events, no matter how "far out" or incomprehensible they seem. We must forget the absolutely fruitless and pointless campaign against the government and Air Force. It has succeeded only in draining our strength, stirring the coals of controversy, and keeping the subject mired in ridicule. It has accomplished absolutely nothing.

We will always be plagued with cults and believers. It is very hard to deny something you think you have seen with your own eyes, or experienced with your own body. Nevertheless, the mounting evidence indicates that such experiences are more psychic than physical, more hallucinatory than real. Instead of condemning those who have the courage to publicly reveal such experiences, we should be studying them, trying to understand the true nature of the experiences. Most of the Men in Black episodes – and I've investigated a great many that will never be published or publicized – seem to be a variation of the hallucinatory experience. The black Cadillacs vanish suddenly into thin air, as do the MIB themselves. They are nothing but marvelous phantasms…

When you study the occult records of the last few hundred years, you are immediately struck by how many phantom horsemen have appeared over the centuries. Before the invention of the automobile, there were many thousands of cases. Sometimes, groups of people would see a phantom horseman appear out of nowhere, and then disappear into nowhere. With the invention of the automobile and the gradual extinction of the horse, it was almost a logical development that the phantom horse would be replaced by the phantom automobile – automobiles that you can chase and that will disappear into thin

air. There were many, many cases of this, and many witnesses have told me of these cases...

You have to see it yourself to believe it. We know that these automobiles exist in a very solid state. On one occasion, a witness actually threw a rock through the window of one of these automobiles and, yet, the automobile later vanished into thin air, in front of their own eyes. So we know that they can seem to be very real, and yet they aren't.

I should make clear to you that I discovered, in 1956, that at least 98% of all the truly important UFO events are never published anywhere, and they are never investigated. Nobody ever hears about them, because nobody ever goes out searching for these cases.

They are simply too weird for most editors to take seriously. This means that the published material is, at best, very superficial and not very useful to research, because it is not giving you the real details. At worst, it means that the real truth has been hidden by diversions, nonsense, and totally meaningless sightings of paraphysical manifestations and materializations.

The real nightmare out there is beyond your belief and comprehension. Until you have taken the time to review the tons and tons of valid, well-documented religious and occult records, all that I have said here will continue to seem like utter nonsense. Many of you suffer from emotional hang-ups over this subject, and have absolutely no sense of objectivity or responsibility at all. Those few of you will always remain in the dark, waiting forever for the Venusians to land on the White House lawn.

A few contactees eventually figured this out for themselves. Howard Menger finally went on Long John Nebel's TV program and confirmed that he realized he had been the victim of strange hallucinations. George Adamski, in his final years, told friends that he was aware that he had been tricked and misled, and that much of what he had believed and preached was absolutely false. It has cost me three years of my life, and many thousands of dollars, to sort all of this out and arrive at these same conclusions.

Flying saucers are primarily a visual, observational phenomenon. They could be the manifestation of another space-time continuum. We have probably never seen the objects or their occupants in their true form. We see only what they want us to see and, to a large extent, believe only what they want us to believe.

It is our tragedy that so many of us have believed so much for so long and, yet, believed so little of the real truth. We have been speculating instead of investigating – settling on a conclusion, and then trying to fit the incoming data into the conclusion.

We can now begin by recognizing the provable fact that most UFOs are paraphysical, and are part of the invisible environment of this planet. They can enter and exit our reality at will. But they have always been beyond our reach, and always will be. We are blind ants trying to comprehend the true shape and nature of an elephant. We have wasted twenty years indulging in fantasies and feuds, nourishing our egos by going on radio and TV to denounce the Air Force, the government, and each other.

Despite our original campaign to make public asses of ourselves, skepticism is almost nonexistent. Millions of people have now seen these marvelous phantasms and accepted their existence as fact. Millions more will be seeing them in the coming years. We must re-evaluate our priorities and establish new goals. We must systematically collect all available data and reduce it to useful form, which will enable us to better interpret the overall patterns of the phenomenon. This is not an easy task, nor is there any glory in it. Today, fewer than 25 people in the U.S. are actually involved in productive UFO research. The rest are all tilting at the same old windmills, collecting the same old clippings and engaging in the same old debates.

I am telling you now, after three years of costly investigation and research, that flying saucers do not exist; but something else does. The UFOs are merely static – noise. We must concern ourselves with the signaler that is sending out that noise. The only possible way to do this is to launch a sensible, systematic study. Kenneth Arnold, Ray Palmer, Meade Layne, Ivan Sanderson, Morris Jessup, Lord Dowding, Victor Goddard, and many other intelligent, qualified men have been telling us the truth for years. There are many other prominent people, whose names would astound you, who have told us privately that they accept fully the paraphysical concept, and totally reject the ET fantasy...

We can drop all this nonsense. We can begin deeper, more important and fruitful investigations, in depth, into each individual area. If you live in Ohio, you don't have to travel to Florida to stare at the sky. Somewhere within a few miles of your home, there is an area that has been a UFO window for centuries; and probably not more than one or two reports a year are actually published in

that area. But, if you go there, you will find that things are seen continuously, year after year.

We have to find these areas. I called them "base areas" in one article, and this led to a great deal of misunderstanding; everyone was running around looking for underground UFO hangers. But there are no underground UFO hangars, because there are no UFOs. The UFOs take any shape they want to take: they can be a black Cadillac in one sequence of events, then the same energy can be recomposed to form a cigar-shaped object, or a grotesque monster, or what have you.

It is easy to use the term "hallucination" for these things, but the term really doesn't fit. I've been calling these things "induced hallucinations," because the people seem to see what someone wants them to see. Many of these objects that have been seen on the ground, and that have left marks behind, are identical to the black Cadillac whose window was broken with a rock and yet was able to vanish into thin air; that is, it existed temporarily, then it was no more. We will never be able to get at the source of these objects. They can come to us, but we cannot go to them. We will never be able to communicate with them, except when they want to be communicated with – when they pick out people who have psychic ability to be "contactees."

They also pick people with very interesting religious and racial backgrounds. If you have Indian blood in your veins, you are more apt to be "contacted" than any other type of person. The majority of our contactees have either Native American or Gypsy blood. If you are Jewish, your chances of being contacted are almost zero. We have very few Jewish contactees for some reason. On the other hand, we have a great many ex-Catholic contactees. So, the religious factor seems to be of some significance.

But the Native American factor is the most important of all. If you live near an Indian reservation, and if you have the tact and ability to win the confidence of the Indians, they will tell you a great deal about the UFO phenomenon. They know all about it. A great many of them have been contactees for years and years. But, you will have to go onto the reservation… You will have to spend some time there and win their confidence. You couldn't do it in an afternoon.

Also, if you should encounter real Gypsies, and if you should be able to win their confidence, you would learn a great deal from them. They, too, know all

about the UFO phenomenon. It is no mystery or secret to them at all. They know the whole story. In fact, a great many people know the whole story because, as I said, there are thousands upon thousands of contactees all over the country who never tell anyone about their experiences.

These contactees are usually introduced to the whole "secret" over a long period of time. I have contactees in my files who were first contacted in 1961, but were not fully aware of what was happening until 1965. Gradually, they were trained and "educated" through their contacts, and given some very useful information that could be proven. We have received scientific information that has been proven in the laboratories. There is a highly qualified physicist on the West Coast who became a contactee in 1966. He has received information for a metallurgical process that has proven out in the lab. He is now getting a patent for it.

Another man in Florida received valid information for a process involving nuclear energy. Wilbur Smith in Canada received several provable bits of information. He made no secret of it. He wrote and talked about it, and gave lectures on it. These contacts are going on all the time. There are various reasons why people refuse to come forward with these stories.

We do have the "public contactees," a very small group of a few dozen people, who seem to be exploited for propaganda purposes. That is, they are given information that is not necessarily valid. They are told to go out and spread the word, which they do, and end up making themselves look like idiots. They believe it themselves, which nobody else does, and there is no possible way they can prove what they are saying.

So, the whole bag is far more complicated than just sitting around waiting for the Venusians to land on the White House lawn. If they were going to do that, they would have landed at the Vatican in 1600, or they would have landed in London in 1200, or in Jerusalem, or what have you. But while they are always appearing and landing, they never enter into formal contact with governments in a provable way…

I trust that I haven't blown your minds with all of this... I do hope that you all enjoy the convention. I am sorry I can't be there. This is John Keel , signing off…

CHAPTER 23

MEDICAL ASPECTS OF NON-EVENTS – ANOMALY MAGAZINE, 1969-72

According to his own words in The Autobiography of Malcolm X, the late (assassinated) black leader was in a prison cell when the following took place:

> As I lay on my bed, I suddenly became aware of a man sitting beside me in my chair. He had on a dark suit. I could see him as plainly as I see anyone I look at. He wasn't black, and he wasn't white. He was light-brown skinned, had an Asiatic cast of countenance, and had oily black hair.
>
> I looked right into his face. I didn't get frightened. I knew I wasn't dreaming. I couldn't move, I didn't speak, and he didn't [either]. I couldn't place him racially, other than I knew he was a non-European. I had no idea whatsoever who he was. He just sat there. Then, suddenly, just as he had come, he was gone.

A great number of UFO (as well as MIB) sightings are entirely subjective. That is, the objects are seen only by specific individuals under very specific conditions. Non-specified persons in the same areas see nothing. RAF air Marshal Sir Victor Goddard has suggested that although most sightings are made by persons with latent or active psychic abilities, non-psychics standing within the "aura" of psychic percipients can also see objects that would normally be invisible. Our own field experiments indicate that this incredible hypothesis might actually be valid.

When a specific individual with proper qualifications is located in a specific "window" area at a time when specific electromagnetic conditions exist (a "flap" period), then that individual is able to perceive beyond the visible spectrum or, possibly, intercept a "signal" that plants an image in his or her mind. While the image may be very vivid and detailed, it is actually non-real, subjective, and "hallucinatory."

The big problem with this type of sighting is that it takes a highly trained

investigator to determine whether or not the reported observation was real or subjective. None of the published UFO cases contain the information necessary to make a definite determination. However, in those cases in which the witness reported an unusually intense emotional reaction, it is probable that a subjective event occurred.

We term these cases “non-events.” They are quite real to the percipient, and can rarely be distinguished from objective sighting reports of possibly solid physical objects, except by a very thorough, in-depth investigation using objective, professional methods. Many “lights in the sky” sightings, “close encounters,” and “contactee” experiences have proven to be subjective rather than real...

The contactee syndrome frequently produces a long-range sequence of physical and emotional changes that closely parallel the well-known symptoms of chronic alcoholism. In many cases, the percipient (UFO contactee) experiences one of two major reactions during the initial contact: 1) Extreme fear, oft-times bordering on hysteria, and 2) complete euphoria.

Hysteria can create temporary paralysis and physiological reactions such as nausea, temporary stomach disorders, headaches, etc.

The euphoric reaction is exactly the opposite. In these cases, the percipient experiences an acute sense of wellbeing or, at minimum, a total lack of volition and control. He or she enjoys the “contact” and looks forward to a recurrence of the same kind of event.

Following contact, one of two emotional responses frequently take place: 1) Expansion of awareness and perception, or 2) Rapid deterioration of personality.

The euphoric-type experience can sometimes produce a combination of these responses. We have now closely investigated and studied approximately 200 involved percipients. In several cases, we were able to isolate potential contactees before their main experiences began. They were kept under constant study through all the stages of initial “contact” and their reactions were carefully recorded and compared. The following information has been derived from those studies.

The type 1 “expansion” percipient gradually develops a higher IQ and

heightened perceptions in all areas. ESP abilities are frequently enhanced. The unconscious mind seems to release all kinds of hidden data into the conscious mind, sometimes through dreams and sometimes through sudden flashes of acute perception. In a few cases, it was noted that visual and auditory acuity were also noticeably affected. These percipients were able to see slightly above the normal visible spectrum, and were able to hear sounds in the ultrasonic range. These changes can occur very suddenly, even within 24 hours after initial contact.

The type 2 "implosion" percipient may briefly enjoy heightened perceptions, but this is usually followed by a slow deterioration of personality.

Persons who were fundamentally honest before contact begin to suffer from confabulation. The UFO event dominates their life, and they willingly engage in any lie or subterfuge necessary to substantiate their story. Since they are consumed by total belief, they can successfully pass lie-detector tests. Specific sensory information is so deeply implanted in their mind that they are able to recite their UFO experiences word-for-word months, even years, later.

The type 2 percipient (and some type 1's) may develop obsessive-compulsive characteristics, and become completely preoccupied with the contact experience. Such individuals devote a large part of their time to spreading the "message" of the UFO occupants, even though this may lead to the loss of their jobs and the eventual disintegration of their family life. They become "space-age messiahs," and willingly endure ridicule and hardship in order to advance the "cause."

These characteristics are also found in religious fanatics who, following a vision or profound religious experience, abandon their former way of life to dedicate themselves to "saving souls." The religious fanatic often develops contempt, even hatred, for those who are "unenlightened." Many vile crimes have been committed by fanatics who justified their actions by claiming that they were following orders issued by the "voice of god" – a classic symptom of paranoia.

On the other hand, the true UFO percipient usually ignores ridicule and skepticism, feeling that he knows the truth, and that others will eventually learn it also. The UFO buff is, by way of contrast, an obsessive-compulsive personality with paranoid leanings. Unlike the UFO percipient, the buff openly

combats skepticism and is an avid publicity-seeker. Very few real percipients want, or seek, personal publicity.

UFO percipients usually suffer mental blackouts, amnesia, and disorientation in time and place. Additional UFO experiences can occur, sometimes on a daily basis, after initial contact. These events usually taper off within a few months, rarely lasting beyond a year. But they can recur again, several years later.

Contact is preceded by a long sequence of preparatory events that are so subtle they are seldom noticed by the potential percipient. In several cases, we have traced these back as far as five years before the overt contact finally took place. In a few cases, these events began in childhood, even though the percipient was not formally contacted until he or she reached adulthood.

The divorce rate among contactees is very high. Part of the contactee syndrome involves divorcing their present spouse and later remarrying a person presumably selected for them by the "entities." in a number of cases, both parties in the new marriage became convinced that they were actually "space people" themselves! Outwardly, these people are perfectly normal in all other respects. Their UFO obsession rarely seems to require extensive psychiatric treatment. The UFO "entities" become a part of their everyday lives – a very secret part.

A majority of all UFO percipients are medically sound, and not heavy drinkers. In fact, many are teetotalers. Yet chronic alcoholics suffer from many of these same symptoms. After several years of hard drinking, there is a distinct deterioration of personality. The hallucinations of delirium tremens are followed by "korsakoff's psychosis," which results in amnesia and disorientation of time and place. Confabulation becomes a prominent symptom, and fictitious episodes are created, to the extent that the severity of the amnesia may not be at first apparent. The patient becomes impulsive, untruthful, and unreliable, and divorce often follows naturally.

The contactee syndrome could be based upon some still undefined form of schizophrenia. The unconscious mind is directly involved. The synapses (memory circuits) of the brain appear to be tampered with in some inexplicable fashion. The percipient's memory is sometimes overloaded with information (to account for periods of time that collapsed during the contact

experience). Thus, a percipient may have vivid total recall of a sequence of non-events that seemingly took several hours, while the actual elapsed time was considerably shorter. Memory of these non-events can include detailed sensory information regarding smell, touch, etc. This is mental hyperbolism – over-programming of the percipient's mind.

These non-events are often allegorical, and may be meant to convey hidden meanings to those capable of properly interpreting the data.

Two techniques are employed by the UFOs. Some percipients are forced to forget their experience by a block that cuts off the memory cells from the conscious mind. Then, as in the case of Betty and Barney hill, the subconscious may feed this hidden data upwards, through dreams and nightmares. The only way to circumvent the block is through the skilled use of hypnosis. However, information extracted through hypnosis cannot be totally trusted.

Other percipients have the memory cells of the actual experience altered in some manner, and false data replaces the true memory. This false data can take incredible forms. The monsters, flights to the other planets, etc. may be remembered with absolute clarity and total conviction. These confabulations seem as real to the witness as his memory of what he had for breakfast that morning.

Fragments of the real experience can remain buried in the unconscious mind. Uninformed psychiatrists and researchers usually make the mistake of merely trying to obtain further confirmation of the remembered experience through hypnosis. They do not try to dig for a deeper, alternate sequence of events.

No contactee event can be accepted on the strength of the percipient's surface memory alone. Paradoxically, total recall of an event may indicate that the event never actually took place. The percipient is able to remember every minute detail because those details were carefully implanted in his memory banks. Witnesses of this type may clearly remember extended visits to the "caves of the Deros," or to the splendid cities of some distant planet, when actually their bodies never left the spot where the contact occurred. This type of non-event is most common in Irish "fairy" lore, occult records, and religious "miracles."

We cannot, of course, exclude the possibility that some percipients may have undergone a genuine physical experience. But our studies indicate that most, if

not all, percipients suffered mind-tampering rather than a real experience. This led to deterioration of personality, insanity, paranoid schizophrenia, and other emotional aberrations.

Non-smokers, teetotalers, and vegetarians seem to have a higher rate of contact. LSD users have a very high rate, and can reveal all of the symptoms. Metabolic changes can occur after contact.

Doctors working with alcoholics and schizophrenics have discovered that vitamin deficiencies can disturb the oxidative metabolism of the brain. It is possible that a similar chemical imbalance is present in the brains of the UFO percipients.

One of the most common symptoms of the contactee syndrome is the involuntary, unconscious, convulsive seizure that produces muscular soreness and migraines, sometimes lasting for weeks after the experience. Victims of hallucinosis can suffer repeated attacks after each new hallucinictims. Specific areas of the brain are affected. These seizures, and all the accompanying effects, are well known to medical science. It is apparent that most – if not all – contactees undergo dramatic changes in the forepart of the brain, possibly induced by electromagnetic waves from an exterior source.

Recently, we were involved in a case in Forest Hills, NY, in which a 12-yr. old girl began to experience hallucinosis followed by mental blackouts and many of the common symptoms of "Jacksonian" seizures. She underwent extensive medical and psychiatric examinations, and the attending doctors discovered she often blacked out when in the presence of fluorescent lighting.

Their rather far-out conclusion was that the girl's brain was "tuned" to the same wavelength as such lights, and their radiation directly interfered with her mental processes. The girl frequently saw, and conversed with, beings that she described as resembling Native Americans. She saw these apparitions in the family kitchen and in school. Fluorescent lighting was used in both places. Interestingly enough, her mother also saw these apparitions on a number of occasions, but claimed they were diminutive (the girl said they were of normal size and form). The family has now moved, convinced that their old home was "haunted." The girl's seizures have diminished since she now avoids rooms with fluorescent illumination.

We first became aware of the pseudo-epileptic effect during our investigation

into the peculiar events around Cherry Hill, NJ in 1966. In that case, the principal witness, a healthy young karate instructor with no history of convulsive seizures, suddenly collapsed. It was while he was being returned from the hospital that he and three others saw a gigantic object hovering above an RCA factory in Cherry Hill. We have dealt with many similar cases since.

Often witnesses to low-level UFO activity later complain of muscular soreness. They recall being transfixed or paralyzed, but they rarely recall any period of unconsciousness. Careful interrogation, however, usually indicates that they suffered a mental blackout ranging from a few seconds to several hours. This produces the well-known "time lapse" effect. Cryptomnesia (when a forgotten memory returns without it being recognized as such by the subject, who believes it is something new and original) is another frequent result.

Flying Saucer Review (vol. 16) recently discussed an intriguing event in Finland in which two young men suffered these classic medical effects, together with actinic ray burns. Numerous other cases have been discussed superficially in the UFO literature. Unfortunately, thorough medical examinations and investigations have been rare, and few researchers have made any effort to study the available medical literature.

For many years now, parapsychologists have been studying the pineal gland's relationship to hallucinosis and psychic manifestations. It is probable that the same "source" or electromagnetic influence that generates some psychic-type apparitions also produces most of the UFO contactee experiences. Those sections of the brain that produce the classic UFO/psychic effects are also the sections that control visual and audio perception.

The meaning is obvious. Images, sounds, and other sensory impressions could conceivably be introduced into the brain by an electromagnetic wave that bypasses the normal channels. The remembered experience would not, therefore, be "real" in the usual sense of the term. An overcharge of this EM wave could produce a deleterious effect and might even lead to a cellular breakdown – a possible explanation for the death by brain tumor of British contactee Arthur Bryant.

Percipients in religious miracles and visions traditionally suffer this pseudo-epileptic effect. The trance state followed by muscular soreness, etc., is common in all frames of reference. It would seem that the purest form of this

type of mental reconditioning is found in the cases of "mystical illumination" or "cosmic consciousness" (see the works of Dr. Bucke for details on this). More destructive variations occur in demonopathy. Schizophrenia is often induced in some percipients. A variety of chemical and emotional problems could be responsible for some cases.

In earlier times, many learned men devoted a large part of their lives to studying and documenting the fairy and/or elemental manifestations. The late sax Rohmer, the creator of Fu Manchu, was also a demonologist. His book, The Romance of Sorcery, has been reprinted in paperback. In that work, he quotes extensively from a book published in 1801 that described and defined the basic elemental manifestations (pages 43-50) and included obvious descriptions of what we now regard as UFO occupants. The materializations of strange, unearthly animals are also described in much of this early literature.

We have frequently observed that the UFO occupants employ variations of nouns from ancient Greek and Roman mythology. Many of the nonsensical names brandished in the UFO contactee literature are clearly derivative and, in many cases, based upon sources so obscure that the reporting contactees could not have possibly been aware of their origin or meaning. All of this constitutes a slight twist on the well-known fairy "name games" of earlier epochs.

In Beyond Condon, we discussed the contact claim of Maris DeLong of Glendale, CA (1967). Mrs. DeLong allegedly met members of a race from the planet "Kronin." This was apparently a variation of Kronos (also spelled Cronus), the youngest of the Titans, son of Uranus and Gaea.

Other ufonauts names stem from old demonological terms. One that baffled us for some time was "skow." Contactee Truman Bethurum claimed that the little men who first approached him in 1952 termed their vehicle a "skow." Now we have located a literary reference. Sir Walter Scott was a learned demonologist. In 1830, a collection of his letters on demonology was published, called Letters on Demonology and Witchcraft. On page 98 we find: "The actors in these disturbances [are said to be] the Skow, or Biergen-Trold, i.e., the spirits of the woods and mountains, sometimes called 'subterranean' people, which appeared in deep caverns and among horrid rocks…"

Many nonfiction books describe UFO contactee-like experiences completely outside the limits of the UFO frame of reference. One of the most fascinating is

The Ultimate Frontier by Eklal Kueshana. This is purportedly the biography of a young man who began to have experiences with "elementals" at the age of 12. UFOs are not mentioned at all, but the myth of the planet "klarian" is presented on page 32. Researchers who have been involved in personal studies of contactees will recognize the many contactee-type experiences outlined.

The elementals that appeared before the young man did not pose as spacemen, but represented themselves as members of a "powerful, ultra-secret brotherhood." Much of the information in the book is identical to the information usually passed along to contactees. Just as the fairies of the Middle Ages represented the "secret Commonwealth," the modern "brothers" have posed variously as the "Illuminati" or as representatives of some super-civilization in the sky.

In Ultimate Frontier, this "X-group" is referred to as "The Black Mentalists." This is fairly well-defined in the book. The Black Mentalists are another variation of the "Mind patrol" so popular in whispered UFO lore.

The contactee syndrome has not been adequately studied by qualified medical researchers. There is no clinical precedent for these manifestations within psychiatry. Yet there seem to be many thousands of "silent contactees" in the U.S. alone. Some of these people have been living in a secret hell for years. We have outlined some of the major symptoms here. An intelligent, properly organized study of these people can give us important insights into the real nature of the overall phenomenon. The stories from the non-events can provide no basis for study. We must examine the people themselves in-depth, and systematically…

In studying subjects working in the vicinity of an electromagnetic field of low radio frequency (0.5KHZ to 30MHZ), Russian observers found: changes in the EEG, glycemic curve, increase in gamma globulin, deviations of the brain nerves, pyramidal symptoms (motion disorders), slight enlargement of the thyroid gland, increases in leukocyte (white bloodcell) count, and slight shifts in the protein composition of the blood, along with headaches, insomnia, irritability, and fatigue.

A study of two groups of mice irradiated with an electromagnetic field (operating at 27.2 MHz at room temperature, and in the cold) respectively

demonstrated that the same field strength of electromagnetic waves that killed the mice at room temperature had little effect on the mice in the cold environment. As might be expected, mice irradiated in the cold environment seemed perfectly content. In contrast, mice not irradiated exhibited a behavior of misery, shivering, failing respiration, and indifference to other physical stimuli.

Headaches, chills, mental confusion and disorientation, and amnesia – all common UFO symptoms – can be induced by these waves and rays.

Laboratory experiments have demonstrated that many of the physical effects and symptoms suffered by UFO percipients can be duplicated by exposing test animals to low-frequency radiowaves. This is a clear indication that powerful low-frequency waves accompany UFO manifestations. In some cases, we have reason to suspect that these low-frequency waves produced a condition that generated hallucinations in the subjects. When we first realized this in 1966-67, we were inclined to attribute these waves to a mechanical or technological source. Further study, as outlined in Operation Trojan Horse and Our Haunted Planet, has led us to discard this enchanting hypothesis. These same symptoms and effects are also common in various forms of psychic and religious phenomena, indicating that all paranormal manifestations may have a common cause. This cause may be beams of electromagnetic energy on the lower frequencies. These beams are not necessarily broadcast by some technological instrument, but may be generated by some unknown force in the cosmos. This force may not be physical at all. The source may be diffuse.

SEX AND THE SINGLE SAUCERER

Hans Lauritzen let another cat out of the bag when Ray Palmer published his long letter regarding his emotional and sexual responses to UFO contact. We have been quietly studying sexual effects of UFO contact since 1966, and have a number of detailed, unpublished reports in our files. The best-known case of this sort, Brazil's Antonio Villas-Boas, is only a minor example. In 1966-67, we uncovered a number of "sexual encounter" incidents in several states, concentrated around college campuses. Some cases were referred to local psychiatrists.

Since 1967, we have approached a number of magazines about doing a

documented article on these cases. Every editor rejected the suggestion, even the editor of Male magazine. And, of course, the ufologists themselves tend to ignore or suppress such reports. APRO received Dr. Fontes' detailed medical report of the Villas-Boas case in the late 1950s, but did not release it until 1966, after Dr. Buhler accidentally stumbled across Boas and published an inaccurate report.

Essentially, these sexual encounters follow the patterns of the well-known incubus-succubus phenomenon found in religious and psychic lore. The same patterns are prevalent in the fairy lore. We discussed this briefly in our various books. Brad Steiger devoted a chapter of his book, Haunted Lover, to other cases he had independently uncovered.

Others, such as Dr. Berthold Schwarz, have studied cases in which the witnesses' genitalia were somehow affected after a UFO experience. Barney Hill developed a ring of warts around his sex organ. Other percipients have come down with the symptoms of venereal disease. Usually these symptoms persist for a day or two, and then disappear.

A large number of scientific studies have been quietly carried out in recent years, particularly in the Soviet Union, to understand the effects of electromagnetic waves more fully. It is known that radiations in the higher frequencies (100 to 3000 MHz) produce a thermal effect (cause organs to heat), and primarily affect the eyes and testes. Below 30 MHz, however, no resonant heating occurs, and the RF (radio frequency) energy completely penetrates the body, exposing all organs.

Obviously sex and the sexual system play a mysterious role in these manifestations. We have been conducting our own studies into this aspect quietly, hoping to develop a rational hypothesis before bringing such a delicate matter into the open. At this point, our studies seem to confirm our general contention that hallucination and confabulation play vital parts in all contactee reports.

SYMPTOMS OF HALLUCINATION

Sudden flashes of light frequently occur at the beginning of UFO contact experiences. These flashes are usually described as resembling a photo

flashbulb. In a number of instances, the witness has been led to believe that he has, in fact, been photographed in some manner. John Reeves, the Florida contactee, thought the UFO entity had raised a camera-like box and taken a picture of him. In the Galli case (described in Operation Trojan Horse), the witness claimed he was flash-photographed after stepping into a craft. Innumerable other witnesses, such as police officer Schirmer of Nebraska, have reported seeing brilliant flashes of light at the outset of their contact experiences.

In one case widely publicized by APRO, the witness reported seeing bright lights moving towards him. The next thing he knew, he was sitting on a high tree limb. Under hypnosis, he recalled a group of strange beings surrounding the tree, while a mechanical object floated towards him and gassed him. This was, most likely, a case of confabulation in which a false memory was implanted in the witness' mind to explain things he noted; sensory impression registered too deeply to be erased.

The case of Betty and Barney Hill began not with a flash of light but with the common (in psychic lore) impression of hypnotic eyes floating bodiless in front of the witnesses. Here, too, the medical explanation would be confabulation. The remembered experience was merely a fiction implanted into the mind to explain the physical evidence of their actual experience. The Hill case was completely mishandled by the attending (Army) psychiatrist, Dr. Simon, who was not versed in UFO lore and who directed the course of the confabulation. It has been proven that patients under hypnosis can produce elaborate, realistic fantasies with total conviction.

When complete details of a contact experience are collected, it is usually found that the witness either observed a flash of light or a bodiless eye at the outset. This is also extremely common in religious lore, particularly in those cases in which angels and entities have appeared. The hypnotic, bodiless eye is usually translated into the "eye of god." These flashes of light occurred at Fatima, and are described in many other accounts of "miracles."

Psychic "flashes" are so common that they are rarely recorded in modern psychic literature. Light flashes are a universal phenomenon in haunted houses, haunted cemeteries, and the like. Persons with psychic ability frequently see such flashes, usually in the corner of their eye. These flashes sometimes precede some important event or change in their lives.

These flashes can take other, more unusual forms. In several Men in Black reports, the witnesses claimed the MIB took their picture with a flash camera. In a few known cases, these "photography" sessions were elaborately staged. The MIB arrived at the witnesses' homes in the usual black Cadillacs, set up a tripod on their front lawns, and seemingly photographed the whole house. In other cases reported to us, the MIB fired flashguns from passing automobiles.

The events surrounding these flash experiences were probably hallucinatory, set in a frame of reference understandable to the witness. John Reeves and others fully believed they were being photographed by space entities. The action made sense to them. In actuality, however, the flash of light probably was a response in the brain to the unknown mechanism that produces paranormal events. There was not an actual flash of light, except in the witness' mind. The flash was produced by the nervous system. It was not something seen by the eyes and transmitted to the brain; rather, it was a response of the brain to a wave of electromagnetic energy transmitted directly to it.

The affected mind then translates this extraordinary and unfamiliar experience into something more acceptable. An analogy can be drawn between a typical contactee and a person sleeping and dreaming. If you are sleeping, and an insect should bite you on the arm, you are likely to have a dream in which you translate the pain of the insect bite to the context of the dream. You might dream that a hypodermic needle is being driven into you arm. Your mind might even construct a very complicated dream around this sensory experience. You might have a nightmare in which a group of longhaired hippies are attacking you with hypodermic needles.

This same process is evident in much of the fairy and witchcraft lore, as Dr. Vallee noted in his book Passport of Magonia. Betty Hill recalled under hypnosis that the alien space people drove a long needle into her abdomen. This puncturing aspect is common in fairy and witchcraft stories. It is likely that these experiences merely produce a pain in certain nerves, and that the mind translates this pain into the "dream" or overall hallucinatory experience, just as the normal sleeper turns an insect bite into a hypodermic injection in his nightmare.

The phantom photographers who abound in UFO lore (we even uncovered one case in the West Virginia "Mothman" fracas) probably fit this category. The

witnesses saw a flash of light at the beginning of their experience, and later remembered this falsely as being the product of a flash camera.

It is well known that U.S. astronauts in space have observed bright flashes of light, even when their eyes were closed. Various theories for this phenomenon have been offered, the most popular being that the flashes are caused by cosmic rays passing through the eyeballs. It is improbable that ground-level witnesses would be suffering from this cosmic ray effect, however.

In medicine, there are several ailments and diseases that can produce light flashes. Sudden flashes of light can be the warning sign of a detached retina. These flashes are also a common symptom of epilepsy.

The major theory now evolving among top ufologists is that a large percentage of all UFO contacts and ground-level experiences are entirely hallucinatory – that some unknown, outside force (like a radiowave) is broadcasting directly to the brains of the witnesses. Their minds then translate this force into images and experiences. The remembered images and experiences are therefore invalid. They have no real meaning at all. Amateur ufologists have spent years trying to interpret these unreal experiences, just as amateur theologians have labored to interpret the meaning of religious apparitions.

The thorough investigator concentrates on the witnesses' physical experiences and reactions. These physical manifestations can be disguised by the remembered experience, but they apparently cannot be erased. Thus, an olfactory response will be remembered as a gas, or even as the work of a mysterious MIB with a gas gun (as in the case of the Mattoon Gasser in the 1940s). Actually, the sensation of being gassed may be the result of a signal traveling along the olfactory nerves, just as the flashes might result from a signal passing along the optical nerves. Strange smells, particularly the smell of violets or sulfur, are common in psychic experiences. The sulfur smell is frequently noted in UFO cases.

To compound the problem, it must be noted that in at least a few cases, the overpowering sulfur smell appeared to have an outward physical cause. Here, the odor may have been the byproduct of the mysterious process of materialization – a process that seems to play an important role in psychic, monster, and UFO events.

All contactee episodes are now very suspect. While the witnesses are sincere

and fully believe their stories, they are actually victims of a complicated mind-tampering process. They have been programmed by some unknown force. There are ways and means for studying this programming process, and qualified scientists in England and the Soviet Union are now working in that direction. The U.S. lags behind in this kind of research.

The light flashes, strange smells, and sharp pains are vital clues to the overall process. The true evidence is medical rather than physical. Hypnosis has questionable use in UFO studies. It has served to confuse the issues by creating confabulations. The real meaning of these experiences is buried at a deep level of the human mind and is related to the so-called "Alpha wave" phenomenon.

CLASSIFICATION OF HALLUCINATION

The mere mention of the word "hallucination" produces a strong emotional response in most ufologists, because they commonly associate hallucinating with insanity. Many ufologists have an inordinate fear of "insanity" after suffering years of ridicule. We have not been using "hallucination" in the colloquial sense, however, but in its strictest medical sense.

A hallucination is an apparent perception for which there is no external cause. A person who repeatedly sees or hears things having no discernible external cause – that are not physically real – is said to be suffering from hallucinosis.

There are three main types of hallucination: visual, audio, and sensual. Visual hallucinations are eyeball impressions of objects that do not exist in reality, and can include everything from animals and insects (such as those seen by alcoholics suffering delirium tremens) to ghosts, monsters, and some categories of unidentified flying objects.

The UFO perception can be divided into two main classes: subjective sightings of objects and entities that may not physically exist, and objective sightings of objects and beings who leave some sort of evidence indicating they were physically real.

The deeper we investigated these things, the more obvious it became that a large percentage of all reported UFO sightings fall into the subjective category. We conducted field tests that verified the fact that only certain people could see the objects at certain times. Too often newspaper reporters and amateur

investigators simply accepted the percipient's testimony without conducting appropriate medical and psychological tests. We found that such people often proved to have active or latent psychic abilities. Many experienced the classic symptoms of deep trance, which accounted for the time lapses and physical symptoms they suffered. For example, Miss Clem, the girl who was the main witness at the Presque Isle, PA landing in 1966, had a history of psychic experiences that included poltergeistic manifestations.

The second type of hallucination (audio) consists of hearing sounds and voices with no discernible external cause. The two types of audio hallucinations most frequently reported are the sounds of a baby crying and the sound of an unseen car door slamming. The "crying baby" phenomenon is common not only among UFO witnesses, but also among thousands of "ghost" and monster witnesses as well. We found that the "door slamming" phenomenon is universal, but is rarely reported in print, because few investigators bother to collect the necessary background information from the witnesses.

The third type of hallucination is a tactile perception. The most common example of this would be the sensation of being touched by invisible hands. This occurs in every frame of reference, ranging from religious experiences to demonology and ufology. In more advanced forms, the feelings can be sexual, or can be impressions of pain. The most common pain hallucinations center around the solar plexus – a sense that a needle or knife is being plunged into the middle or lower abdomen. Stigmata can result in some cases, with slow-healing wounds appearing on the tips of the fingers, the face and jaw, and the forearms. This phenomenon was so widespread in the Middle Ages that it gave rise to the vampire legends of central Europe.

During one of our first visits to the Wanaque Reservoir in New Jersey in 1966, we interviewed a woman who told us of an unusual "dream." she said she had awakened in the middle of the night and gone into the kitchen, where she found a group of "little men" who placed her in a semi-trance, stretched her on the kitchen table, and drove a long needle into her stomach. We were intrigued because we already knew about Betty Hill's alleged "pregnancy test" at the hands of the "little men," even though John Fuller's account of the Hill case had not yet been published. Among other things, the NJ woman said she had the distinct impression that this same thing was happening simultaneously in homes throughout the world.

Pains in the abdomen are an integral part of occult lore. The history of these experiences can be traced back hundreds of years.

Another major symptom reported so often in religious miracles and UFO contact cases is a mental state in which the pleasure centers of the brain are stimulated. Volition is diminished, and the feeling is very sexual. It is usually described as being a kind of extreme orgasm, which can last for a long period of time (or seem to). Percipients who experience this are usually very receptive to – even anxious for – further contacts. This state of "ecstasy," as the religionists call it, seems to be a response in the brain circuits to a beam of electromagnetic energy. It may be nothing more than a side-effect of the mechanism that produces hallucination.

Hearing voices of people who aren't there is really not an extraordinary phenomenon. Millions of people have heard these mysterious voices throughout history. In psychic phenomena, the ability to hear allegedly supernatural voices has long been known as "clairaudience." In psychiatry, people who hear voices that drive them to destructive acts are generally labeled "schizophrenic." Many of the major political assassinations in history were carried out by individuals who claimed a disembodied voice drove them to act.

Clairaudience became closely associated with UFO manifestations in the mid-1940s. Richard Shaver tried to explain that the voices were actually projected by "rays" from the caves of the Deros ("detrimental robots"). In 1948, one of the first issues of FATE magazine, then edited by Ray Palmer, carried an article on the subject. Mr. Palmer was obviously aware of the relationship between clairaudience and UFOs, even in those days.

Victims of this eerie manifestation usually attempt to place the voices within the context of some personal belief. It is not unusual for such victims to accept the voice as coming from God or the devil. Others come to believe they are hearing "a broadcast from the government." And in thousands of UFO contact cases now on record, the witnesses described silent "telepathic" conversations with entities from outer space.

The cases we have investigated personally proved to be combinations of visual and audio hallucinations, with the percipient entering a trancelike state at the outset of the experience. While in a trance, the victim's consciousness is

cut off from reality. His or her mind constructs a false, but seemingly genuine, reality for the course of the experience, just as conventional schizophrenics withdraw into a reality of their own making.

Traditionally, the contact experience begins with a visual hallucination, which establishes the frame of reference. The victims see and converse with an angel (seeing and talking with angels is a widespread phenomenon, even today), a demon, a spaceman, or even – like the giant rabbit, "Harvey" – a large animal of some sort. In a number of unpublished cases in our files, the witness first had a seemingly chance encounter with a man in a gray or black suit, or a woman in a long, Native American type of dress. These entities quickly establish ("prove") that they know everything about their victim's history, and can accurately predict his or her future. At first, they appear almost daily before the percipient, passing along valid information and advice, and creating a solid "friendship."

If the UFO frame of reference is being used, the first encounter may be staged on an isolated road. Often the victim goes to the first encounter on sheer impulse. That is, they suddenly get an urge to get into their car and go for a pointless drive. But a skillful interview usually brings a number of seemingly unrelated facts to the surface. The victim may have had a series of minor experiences and symptoms long before the first contact. One of the most common is the sudden blackout. Weeks or months before contact, the witness passes out suddenly for several minutes, for no apparent medical reason. Such blackouts usually occur while riding in a car, train, or plane, but they can happen in the bedroom or bathroom, or at work.

Another early warning sign of impending contact is the "number-calling phenomenon." Here, the victim begins to hear a monotone voice calling out meaningless numbers over their radio or television set. In some cases, the numbers are read to them over the telephone in a succession of mysterious phone calls. The victim is always alone when this happens. If another person should enter the room while numbers are being recited on the TV, for example, the voice will suddenly cease.

So, the victim is prepared for contact, subliminally. Perhaps this process even programs their mind in the same way that a computer is programmed.

Once contact is established, the victim can be drawn into a series of

complicated adventures. They may be called upon to "help" the space people in various ways, just as the fairies in earlier times often asked for human help. The games can become tremendously involved. One percipient was asked to purchase some items from a store and leave them in an isolated field late at night. Another percipient, a person completely unknown to the first, is then directed to the field to retrieve the merchandise and deliver it to another place. Percipient #1 believes the material was picked up by the space people. Percipient #2 believes the material was dropped by the space people.

Howard Menger and other published contactees have described their involvement in this kind of game. When we investigated a number of these "drops," we were impressed by the obvious fact that the unrelated contactees had to have a common bond – that they were experiencing something beyond ordinary schizophrenia. That bond had to be the intelligence or force that was somehow controlling these people.

Some victims are told to set up communications through indirect means such as a "sounding board" (Ouija board), or by taking hypnotics (sleeping pills). They are also directed to go to specific places when they desire contact. These places are usually isolated spots like high hills, graveyards, deserts, and beaches. In a number of instances, the percipients were drawn again and again to the site of their original UFO observation. Once there, they underwent a new hallucination.

In 1957, Ohio's Olden Moore was supposedly driven to a UFO landing site by the local sheriff. A helicopter was waiting there to whisk him to an airport. He was then flown to Washington and held there for three days in a government building. Actually, when we collected all the facts on this case, it was apparent that this trip never really took place. Moore remembered the trip vividly, but the memory was probably a confabulation to account for the days during which his body, sans consciousness, was engaged in some other activity.

Persons directed to use a Ouija board often fall prey to uglier manifestations, such as the incubus and succubus phenomenon. Many have told us in detail of how invisible entities attacked them sexually after they began using a Ouija board. There are many striking similarities in the details in these widely separated, rarely publicized cases, so we can't discount them as being purely psychological.

Someone trapped into, and obsessed by, a particular frame of reference can undergo all of these experiences, in every possible variation. They can take imaginary trips to heaven, hell, the caves of the Deros, "secret underground UFO bases," and other planets. They can become involved in elaborate games with Men in Black types, and can experience total distortions of reality.

In UFO cases, paranoids are made, not born. The entities make it very clear that their victim's every move is being observed. The mail and phones behave mysteriously, providing further "evidence" of this continual surveillance. They are given very precise predictions about the future – not the usual wearisome generalities of the professional seers ("there will be an earthquake somewhere in april") – but exact information such as, "next Thursday you will receive a phone call at 9:32 a.m., informing you of the death of a distant relative." When the call comes in at exactly 9:32 on the appointed day, the victim is further convinced that the entities know everything about the future, as well as the past.

In some cases, the victim begins to believe that he or she is doing more than receiving insights into the future. They begin to believe they are causing future events merely by thinking about them. This notion produces great fear and mental confusion, and leads to real paranoia and a complete mental breakdown.

Over the years, we have investigated and studied innumerable cases in all the various frames of reference. The modus operandi of the "spacemen" and the angels and demons is identical. The UFO lore is clearly based upon classic manifestations that have no connections with beings from outer space. UFO contactees who hear voices in their heads follow the same patterns found in other frames of reference. Many are driven nuts by the phenomenon, or fall into patterns of fanaticism, becoming UFO evangelists.

When Dr. Simon first hypnotized Barney Hill, he left him with a posthypnotic suggestion. Whenever Dr. Simon uttered the word "trance," Barney was to lapse instantly into a hypnotic trance.

The UFO phenomenon is partly based on a form of post-hypnotic suggestion. Certain words or perceptions are introduced into the percipient's mind, and when these words or perceptions reappear again – even years later – the percipient is automatically triggered into a trance or hallucinatory state. The

number-calling phenomenon may be one such "trigger."

Another standard example was given in B. Ann slate's article in the April 1972 issue of SAGA. An engineer named Wheeler had a classic sighting of a grounded UFO on a highway in the mid-1950s. Although there were undoubtedly many more important details to that sighting than Mr. Wheeler later remembered, he did recall vividly the dark lettering he observed on the object – stylized versions of the Greek letters "BXP." Years later, he saw – or thought he saw – these same letters in another UFO sighting. Actually, the letters were the clue to the "trigger" used in his case. Although his conscious mind may not have had any knowledge of Greek, the subliminal technique is such that if the letters "beta-xi-pi" were projected into his mind, or over his car radio, he would lapse instantly into a trance state.

An even more widely used UFO trigger is a pulsing, beeping sound that can be projected on the specific frequency of the percipient's mind. The victim hears the beeping sound, lapses into a trance, and enjoys a hallucination. Then he wakes up to another beeping sound (this happened to Barney Hill). In the interval between beeps, the victim may travel a great distance, change clothes completely, and carry out acts foreign to his nature. Like a person who has been hypnotized, he or she experiences a time lapse. That is, no time seems to have passed between the beeps, but when they check a clock later, they find they cannot account for several minutes or, in some cases, several days.

Some UFO experiences appear to be variations of the classic "death dream" so well known to medicine, religion, and parapsychology. Arthur ford's book, They Came Back, is only one of several tomes documenting such dreams.

In a death dream, the patient is often in a hospital or involved in a serious accident, and is comatose. While he or she is close to death they have a vivid, lifelike dream in which they are ascending a staircase to heaven, greeting deceased friends and relatives, or even meeting God. Needless to say, no two death-dreams really match. Each one describes a highly personalized concept of heaven. When the patient comes out of their coma, they often remember the dream as a very real, physical experience. Religionists and cultists use such dreams as "evidence" to support their beliefs in an afterlife.

We have investigated several UFO experiences that seem based on death dreams. In one of the most recent, the victim was alone aboard a small boat in

the fall of 1971. He heard a beeping sound and observed a brilliant blue light overhead. He had a history of heart attacks and was in an alcoholic stupor at the time. His entire experience lasted 12 hours, during which his boat (which was out of gas) moved several miles. Men in black suits appeared on his boat. Others in frogman garb came out of the water. They wanted him to go with them. Perhaps if he had consented to do so, his dead body would have been found later.

Some persons manage to have combinations of all these experiences. It is unfortunate that so few of their complete stories ever reach print. Police officer Dale Spaur, who was the principal in the sensational Ohio UFO chase of 1966, later became a contactee. His experiences followed the classic patterns. But his full story, like so many others, has never been publicly revealed. Menger, Adamski, Derenberger, and a few others have managed to publish a minute fraction of their total experiences. The sexual aspects of their adventures were laundered out.

When only selected segments written from a posture of belief appear in print, it is easy to dismiss them as lies and nonsense. Even Interrupted Journey, John Fuller's book on the Hill case, deliberately left out the most significant details of their experience. And the details of engineer Wheeler's real experience are now completely lost, because investigators were bent on extracting only those details that supported their personal theories on UFO propulsion. Adequate medical and psychological data is missing from almost all UFO reports.

The UFO "mystery" is based upon two simplistic factors: the superabundance of sightings all over the world, and the testimony of contactees and low-level witnesses. Neither provides real evidence to support the beliefs of the UFO enthusiasts. The intrusion of classic psychic manifestations and hallucinatory factors demolishes the contactee phenomenon. Aerial sightings of machine-like "hard" objects have always been exceedingly rare. So rare that the few that have appeared are very suspect.

The real key to the "mystery" will probably be found in qualified medical studies of the percipients themselves. The big question to be answered is what really happens to the percipients' bodies for hours or days when their minds are taking trips? In other frames of reference, "possession" is offered as the answer. That is, another intelligence takes over their bodies, turning them into robots of a sort, using that body to carry out physical activities that would be

impossible for a nonphysical entity.

One prominent ufologist, a college professor, was led to believe that his body was used to carry out a jewel robbery in 1967. He had no memory of it, of course, but he noted that the speedometer on his car registered several miles he didn't remember driving, and he did remember hiding something in a local graveyard. After these experiences, he abandoned ufology.

All of these matters must be explored systematically and objectively, not by believers and enthusiasts, but by medical doctors and psychologists. The UFO field has always attracted people who lack the training and discipline to conduct through investigations into all the aspects. Most have sought to prove the reality of UFOs, the existence of extraterrestrial life, and even the methods of propulsion, basing their "evidence" on such intangibles as dreams and hallucinations experienced in a trance state.

As we have stated so often, in so many ways, the phenomenon is much more complex than anything envisioned by the believers. We are dealing with forces that can alter reality itself. They can make us see anything, believe anything, and worst of all, do anything.

Every July, dozens of people (perhaps hundreds we don't know about) suffer amnesia and vanish. A few come back, baffled and unable to account for their disappearances. Others experience shorter periods of amnesia. And they do know – they think – where they've been. They've been to Heaven. Or Antarctica. Or the planet Jupiter.

Each year, thousands of people throughout the world see angels, the devil, assorted monsters, even dinosaurs. Others wander into the past of the future, through some mysterious door in the Twilight Zone. Still others are found in a mindless, catatonic trance, staring into space, abandoned by their consciousness.

Our little planet is haunted. Are we all biological robots, ruled and controlled by some outside force, as the great religions have taught for thousands of years? Or are all of our cults and fringe beliefs based upon the capriciousness of the human mind itself?

CHAPTER 24

SECRET UFO BASES ACROSS THE U.S. – SAGA MAGAZINE, APRIL 1968

For the past twenty years, amateur "flying saucer" investigators have been joyfully wallowing in pseudo-scientific speculations about the origin of unidentified flying objects, seizing upon fragile straws of observational evidence which – they have concluded – "proves" that the thousands of objects reported over the last few years come from some extraterrestrial source. But these self-styled "experts," whose ranks include everyone from professional astronomers to obvious cranks living in attics surrounded by books on black magic, have refused to recognize or even consider the simple and surprising solution clearly indicated in all the patterns of UFO activity. Because they have been unable to accept this solution, they have added mystery upon mystery to the phenomenon, and have drifted further and further from the readily apparent truth.

Since 1948, a long line of patient Air Force officers have been soberly parroting the official "line" droning that "there is no evidence that unidentified flying objects are of extraterrestrial origin." Despite many efforts, the hardcore UFO buffs have never been able to disprove this statement. At best, the massive observational data indicates merely that seemingly solid aerial machines of radical design and unusual performance characteristics exist, and operate within our atmosphere throughout the world. Out of the approximately 2,500 cases in which witnesses have reported seeing the UFO pilots themselves, roughly 90 percent of these "pilots" have been described as humanoid beings dressed in coveralls or tight-fitting "space suits." In about 30 percent of the cases, the "pilots" were said to look exactly like us, with only minor differences in facial features (over-large eyes, peculiar mouths, etc.).

While some have been described as wearing transparent helmets or apparent breathing apparatus, the majority seem to be able to breathe our atmosphere and function easily within our environment. If even a small percentage of these reports are accurate, it would seem that the UFO pilots are very similar to ourselves. Either they come from an environment identical to ours, or they have

successfully adapted to the conditions on this planet.

Over the past twenty years, many substances have been dropped from "flying saucers" in view of innumerable witnesses, and other substances have been found at alleged landing sites. Analysis of such materials has determined that commonplace metals such as aluminum, chromium, tin, magnesium, and silicon are apparently being used in the construction of the UFOs.

In short, the preponderance of available "hard" evidence clearly indicates that the elusive saucers are manufactured of earthly metals and alloys, and that they are piloted by beings similar to – if not identical to – ourselves.

Hardcore UFO buffs choose to deliberately overlook all this and continue to champion the extraterrestrial thesis, asserting that the millions of eyewitnesses have clearly described objects that must have originated on some other planet. These objects have frequently been picked up on radar, and have been tracked traveling at speeds in excess of 4,000 miles per hour, making incredible turns at those speeds. Such feats are beyond our current known technology.

This kind of performance does not actually prove the presence of "advanced technology," however. It merely proves a different technology. We have concentrated on the development of aircraft based upon aerodynamic principles, while the UFO builders apparently have utilized a non-aerodynamic system involving, perhaps, some distortion of the gravity field. The difference may be as slight as the difference between the outrigger canoes of the South Seas and the kayaks of the far North, or the picture writing of the Orient with the script writing of the West. It may be a cultural difference, rather than a sign of an advanced technology.

At a press conference in 1948, Gen. Carl Spaatz of the Air Force declared that there was "no truth" to the "rumors" that the UFOs were "piloted by Spaniards or were from Spain." This was an astonishing pronouncement, because a review of all the UFO reports and clippings from that period failed to turn up any such "rumor." We can only surmise that the Air Force was then receiving reports from witnesses who claimed that they had observed Spanish-types around grounded UFOs. That is, beings with dark skin, and of slight stature, speaking in a rapid-fire language resembling Spanish. Such reports did begin to circulate in the early 1950s, and continue today on an ever-increasing scale.

Again, this seems to be a clear indication that the "flying saucers" are

occupied by terrestrial-type beings who can be easily mistaken for known racial groups. From General Spaatz's statement, it looks as if the Air Force had begun to receive such reports in the 1940s. These reports may have been one of the factors leading to the creation of their inflexible policy statement that the UFOs are not of extraterrestrial origin.

Maybe the Air Force has been telling us the truth all along, but the UFO buffs simply don't want to believe it!

Could the "flying saucers" actually be native to the third planet from the sun? The answer is a disturbing "yes!"

In the past two years, the author has seen many different unidentified flying objects in many sections of the country. The majority of these objects were brilliant lights of a crystal white, with smaller red lights on top or around the perimeter. These lights maneuver with a peculiar bobbing motion, as if they were on a yo-yo string, and they often fly low over highways, or at treetop level. They are completely silent and apparently under intelligent control; very often, several appear at one time, flying in perfect formation. In some areas, such as the Ohio Valley, these lights appeared nightly on a regular schedule for weeks, and were viewed by thousands.

Early in April, 1967, the author "staked out" a remote hilltop near Gallipolis Ferry, West Virginia for several nights, and observed many of these strange lights apparently landing and taking off from inaccessible hilltops about two miles away. Each evening, these lights would suddenly begin to glow on the hilltops at about 10:30 p.m., and slowly bob in the air. At times, they chose to pass directly over our parked car. On one occasion, in the presence of witnesses who later signed affidavits, the author flashed a light at one of the objects. It actually returned the signal by flashing a brilliant light back three times. It was like a flashgun going off. On other occasions, these lights responded by instantly going out and disappearing the moment a flashlight was blinked at them. (Having witnessed the dull and diffused glow of "swamp gas" many times, the author can attest that these lights are not natural, glowing gasses.)

Reports of this kind of light have been coming in from all parts of the world for many years. In many cases, the lights are said to have deliberately pursued automobiles and railroad trains. In the early 1900s, they chased men on

horseback!

One such light is actually native to an area between Hornet, MO and Quapaw, OK. Known as the "Spook Light of the Ozarks," it has been regarded as a local phenomenon for as far back as anyone there can remember. The Quapaw Indians have ancient legends about it, claiming that it is the spirit of a young Indian couple who committed suicide there long ago. Extensive published records of this mysterious light go back 80 years. It has been described variously as a greenish-yellow globe four to six feet in diameter, and sometimes as a brilliant white with a reddish glow on top.

Roy Grainger of Joplin, MO claims that when he was a boy in the early 1900s, he was a member of a group that took rifles to the "spook light" area, and actually fired at it. "As we shot," he wrote years later, "the light seemed to dance from side to side, as though it was dodging the bullets." Since then, many others have fired at the thing without scoring.

In many cases, the light has reportedly played "tag" with automobiles, just as UFOs do all over the world. Back in 1935, one girl told reporters that she fainted after the light flew toward her and "perched on the radiator of her car." Chester McMinn of Quapaw testified in the 1930s that the light had chased him while he was riding a tractor. (Many farmers around the country reported being "chased" by UFOs while riding tractors in 1966-67.)

One C. Paul Spidell of Baxter Springs, Kansas visited the area in 1946, and later recounted his experiences to a reporter for the Kansas City Star. "The 'spook light' seemed to be about 10 feet up from the ground," he said. "As it approached, there was a reflection on the hood of my car. Four beams were like pipe-stem arms and legs. About 50 feet away, it stopped and decided to climb a tree to our right, where it perched for awhile, losing its brilliance and turning into a kind of ectoplasmic cloud."

That 1946 report is identical to thousands of UFO reports that would turn up later. A group of U.S. Army Engineers visited the "spook light" site in 1946, and could not find an explanation. A long line of scientists, meteorologists, astronomers, and just plain curiosity-seekers have been exploring the area since. Most of them saw the light, and none of them were able to figure out what it was.

Similar "spook lights" haunt many other parts of the world, and have

apparently been around for years. One is supposed to "live" around Mt. Kilimanjaro in Africa, while another stands guard at Mt. Shasta in California. All of these lights display typical UFO characteristics, appear to be under intelligent control, and defy all efforts to capture them or rationally explain them.

The Missouri "spook light" gives us a substantial record of sightings going back many years. Everything indicates that, unlike many UFOs, it remains in a single area perpetually. It is therefore safe to assume that this particular unidentified flying object "lives" in Missouri, and does not fly back and forth to Mars or Ganymede.

The massive amount of available data points to some obvious conclusions deliberately overlooked by the UFO buffs. We find, when analyzing the thousands of sightings reported in the past 20 years, that UFO activity is not sporadic, but is constant and consistent in many specific parts of the country. Newspaper coverage of sightings is erratic and inconsistent, but not the phenomenon itself. Self-styled "ufologists" have been so intrigued with their extraterrestrial theories that they have failed to take note of these consistent factors.

Sections of Ohio and West Virginia, for example, have had extensive sightings, year after year, in the same relatively isolated and thinly populated areas. The region around Seattle and Tacoma, WA has had continuous activity (although poorly reported and investigated by local UFO buffs) for many years. In North and South Carolina, UFO activity dates back to 1922 and is still going on in those states, although the local newspapers pay very little attention to the reports. Sections of Texas, Arizona, and Oklahoma have a history of sightings going all the way back to 1860. (In fact, a farmer named John Martin was the first to coin the phrase "flying saucer" when he described the object he saw outside Dallas, Texas in 1878.)

Recorded sightings of mysterious objects in the sky actually go back much further. Ancient Hindu manuscripts written 5,000 years ago describe things almost identical to those being reported today. The average UFO "believer" regards all of these historical records as "proof " that the Earth has been "visited" throughout its long history. But when you dig deeper, you are forced to realize that the recorded sightings represent only a fraction of the total.

Although only a handful of sightings received national publicity in 1966-67, UFO activity has been constantly intensive and has extended throughout the world. The wire services and newspapers have neither the incentive nor the personnel to keep tabs on all of the reported sightings and collate them. One newspaper editor recently explained to the author, "When you've read one UFO report, you've read them all." Although he was receiving an average of three reports per day, he bothered to print only about one a month.

If a Frenchman in World War II saw a single Sherman tank rumbling down a country road, he could reasonably deduce that there were undoubtedly many other Sherman tanks in France. He did not need to know that thousands of other Frenchmen were also seeing American tanks in order to confirm his deduction. Applying this same simple logic to the UFO phenomenon, we can assume that if two published UFO sightings survived from the year 1840, there may have been hundreds or even thousands of such sightings that year. Indeed, the late Charles Fort did burrow into yellowing newspaper files and old scientific journals, and uncovered many such sightings.

To belabor this important point: It is obvious that unidentified flying objects have been consistently active in the same areas for many years. Therefore it is quite reasonable to speculate that many of these objects actually originate in some unknown manner from these areas rather than traversing great spatial distances to make brief, random, and apparently pointless "visits."

In short, many of the thousands of observed "flying saucers" and "spook lights" are more apt to be a part of the Earth's environment than extraterrestrial craft flying in from some distant point. We have mistakenly misled ourselves into believing that unidentified aerial vehicles must be extraterrestrial merely because they do not conform to the patterns of behavior of known, manmade flying machines.

By the same token, UFO buffs now take the numerous "little men" sightings more seriously than the reports of normal-sized, normal-looking UFO occupants in coveralls, because the "little men" seem to substantiate the outer space theories; the normal-type pilots do not. Also, the normal-looking characters have been repeatedly described in many of the controversial "contactee" reports. Until very recently, very few "ufologists" took such reports seriously.

The unbelievable scope of the UFO phenomenon provides such a broad spectrum of contradictory data that it is possible – even probable – that several different "groups" are involved. The "little men" that have been reported may not be at all related to the nine-foot tall giants that have also allegedly been seen. However, there is abundant historical and archaeological evidence to indicate that both giants and dwarfs once inhabited many parts of the world. Giant coffins containing the bones of nine-foot tall humans were unearthed in Central America in the 19th Century. On the other end of the scale, traces of a civilization of dwarfs have been discovered in South America, Africa, and even in the New England states.

Who were these bizarre people, and where did they eventually go? No one seems to know, and scientists sweep these "erratic" artifacts under the carpet. Clergymen, on the other hand, point to the Bible and Genesis 6:4: "There were giants in the earth in those days, and also after that…"

Researchers who have plunged into the vast literature on elves, fairies, and leprechauns have come up with equally fascinating cases – carefully documented throughout history – in which apparently sober and reliable people have actually seen "little people." in many of these cases, the reported behavior of these "little people" is very similar to the behavior of the "little men" who have allegedly been observed around grounded flying saucers.

As we examine this great mass of data, much of which is impressively documented, we are forced to wonder if perhaps these ancient groups may not have found it preferable to coexist with savage and unpredictable modern man, while remaining aloof from him (us). Perhaps they even developed their own hidden cultures safe in some foreboding jungle or mountain range. Few people seem to realize that four-fifths of our planet is largely unexplored (since it consists of water, deserts, jungle, and icefields), and that only Europe and the United States have been adequately mapped. There are, in addition, many places where only three or four white men have passed through in all of recorded history. The world is full of hiding places. Some of them are right here in the United States.

Remember that UFO activity seems to be most intensive in isolated, thinly populated areas. In those regions, the activity reaches a peak between the hours of 10 p.m. and 4 a.m., when most of the local population is fast asleep. Dr. Jacques Vallee and other patient researchers have charted these patterns. Many

ufologists fear that such obvious efforts to operate unobserved might suggest an ultimately hostile motive. Because of these patterns, it is highly probable that a considerable part of all UFO activity has gone on totally unobserved and unreported. Thus we can almost be certain that for each observed activity there are hundreds or even thousands of flights, landings, etc., of which we are not even aware.

This kind of intensive and continuous activity would be logistically unrealistic if the objects had to fly back and forth between Earth and some home base on another planet. It would be far more practical for the objects to operate from bases of some sort in the barren plains of the Midwest, the little-explored and rarely visited forests of Northern Canada, the jungles of Brazil, or a thousand other isolated and inaccessible places.

One group of far-out cultists have advanced the theory that a super-race of giants resides in caves deep toward the center of the Earth, and that these "Deros," as they are called, not only operate flying saucers but are also responsible for all our troubles, ranging from wars to flu epidemics. This "Inner Earth" theory was first expounded by one Capt. John Cleves Symmes in 1818. He actually petitioned Congress for funds to finance an expedition to the center of the Earth (he planned to enter through an opening he was sure existed at the North Pole), and he even succeeded in getting 25 Congressmen to vote for his scheme.

In 1944, a welder named Richard shaver sent a long letter to Ray Palmer, then the editor of Amazing Stories magazine, outlining his alleged experiences with the Deros and their underground world. Palmer wrote a story based on the letter and published it. The magazine was flooded with letters from readers "confirming" Shaver's story – some 50,000 in all – and the "Shaver Mystery" was born. Interestingly, Richard Shaver described saucer-shaped craft some three years before Kenneth Arnold's report of nine such objects near Mt. Rainier, which kicked off the nation's first publicized "flying saucer scare." For a time, Ray Palmer was even accused of having created the whole UFO mystery just to sell his magazine. But the events of the succeeding two decades cleared him of that ugly charge.

If anything, Shaver's tales appear to have been based upon weird hallucinatory experiences that might have been very real to him, and which may have been part of the long campaign to feed us confusing misinformation. Certainly all

that we know about Earth and the mechanics of its motion rules out the possibility of a hollow interior. None of the advocates of the "Inner Earth" theory have been able to produce even a small shred of evidence to support it.

That "spook light" in Missouri must be originating from some spot within a ten-mile radius, yet no one has ever discovered its hiding place. If it were not for its apparently intelligent and controlled behavior, we might be able to write it off as a natural phenomenon.

Ivan Sanderson, a renowned biologist, is one of the serious, scientifically oriented ufologists who have dared to suggest that some of the mysterious flying lights might really be misunderstood natural phenomena. In his recent book, Uninvited Guests, he proposed that some of these objects could be alive – living packets of energy, drifting in from space to feast at the "free lunch counters" of our power lines. However, the "spook light" and its many counterparts were around long before this planet was girdled with power lines.

In 1947-48 another, more mundane, theory enjoyed brief popularity. It was suggested that the luminous blobs might be parcels of ionized air, electrical plasma, or ball lightning. Scientists quickly discovered, however, that ball lightning was a very rare phenomenon and followed a definite pattern of behavior quite different from UFOs. Tiny balls of electrical plasma were later produced in laboratories, but they only lasted for brief seconds and had to be created in a vacuum. It was also suggested that a "corona effect" around power lines might be producing spheres of electrical plasma. This theory was quickly discarded.

Back in the 1900s, General Electric's brilliant Dr. Steinmetz had carefully taken the "corona effect" into consideration when he designed the first power systems. The wires were spaced and insulated in such a way as to prevent the effect from taking place. Steinmetz's system has been constantly improved upon. Today, most modern power plants are equipped with a "corona meter," which tells them instantly if a spark or corona is building up anywhere along their lines.

In 1966, an electronic engineer named Phillip Klass dusted off the electrical plasma theory and tried to reopen the whole subject. He garnered a lot of newspaper space, such that the aimless and thoroughly disproven concept

again roused the ire of the UFO buffs.

There may really be a natural explanation for many unidentified flying objects, but we haven't stumbled upon it yet. What could glow so brightly that it actually burns the eyes of many witnesses, responds to light signals from the ground, dodges bullets intelligently, and makes absolutely no sound?

For 20 years, the ufologists have told us that such things are "space ships" from another world. But perhaps they are making a mistake by lumping these lights together with the large, metallic objects that have often been seen in broad daylight and which might possibly be "space" ships.

In hundreds of reports, these "metallic" objects have been described as gigantic in size (in contrast to the lights, which are often only a few feet or even a few inches in diameter). Portholes, fins, and other distinguishing features have frequently been observed on these mysterious objects. Are these huge machines hiding in our forests and plains, or are they based at the bottom of our oceans? Or could it be that some of these things are "alien" after all?

Let's open Pandora's box a little further… If some of these larger craft are "alien," and if they are visiting our planet repeatedly without establishing open and direct contact with us, then they must have another, unsuspected purpose. If some – or most – of the observed UFOs are based here, then it might be plausible to assume that the alien visitors are engaged in social or commercial intercourse with the "beings" occupying those theoretical bases. The visitors may be coming from the home base of those other beings, and may be bringing in supplies, additional personnel, etc., to establish new bases.

Should this be the case, the visitors may very well have hostile intentions. They could busily be setting up a sufficient number of secret bases, preparatory to launching a sudden and totally unexpected attack against us. If the visitors come from a great distance, it might take them many years or even centuries before their terrestrial bases would be strong enough to launch such an attack.

In the meantime, it would be necessary to keep us from suspecting anything. A program of psychological warfare would have to be instituted to keep us in confusion and blind us to the presence of the bases and the reconnaissance craft being used to study us, examine our strengths and weaknesses, and plan the ultimate attack. The strongest technique would be to engineer situations that would create a curtain of ridicule around the whole subject of unidentified

flying objects, instill fear in the accidental witnesses to UFO operations, and avert official recognition or study of the phenomenon.

Apparently, this is precisely what is being done.

The rapid increase in reported UFO activity since 1964 indicates that new bases are possibly being installed and expanded throughout the world, under our very noses and without detection. If some of these UFO "bases" have always existed here, perhaps they have been somehow enlisted to participate in the visitors' operation. To keep us off-guard, we have occasionally been contacted and given messages of peace and goodwill, and handed a "line" about the visitors' place of origin and motives. The circulation of such stories kept the avid UFO believers off-guard and, at the same time, made the whole subject seem even more ridiculous to the skeptics.

Thanks to the UFO buffs' 20-year campaign to convince everyone that the "flying saucers" were from outer space, no one has thought of looking for an answer closer to home. While everyone has been studying the skies, searching for a clue to the origin of the UFOs, the objects and their occupants may have been happily nesting in our very midst, quietly preparing for their "D-Day."

Astronomers and physicists have tediously repeated the same arguments against the possibility of extraterrestrial visitations for 20 years. Everything we know about the planets in our own solar system seems to rule them out as possible sources. The nearest star is four light-years away and, according to our concepts of celestial mechanics and the limitations of our own technology, it would be virtually impossible to travel that distance within a human lifetime. But we cannot overlook these sobering facts:

1. Entities from another star system would probably have a technology completely different from our own
2. They might also have a much longer lifespan – or even immortality
3. They might know many things about the universal laws that we have not discovered, or even suspect

In other words, the factors that seem like insurmountable problems to us might not even exist to them.

Now, let us assume that such an extraterrestrial race exists and that interstellar travel is no problem to them. This is a mighty big assumption, admittedly, but there are some extraordinary "facts" to support a very interesting hypothesis. The alien race might have "discovered" the Earth in prehistoric times and established a base or two here, far removed from the areas where man was then living. Perhaps the giants and dwarfs were the most advanced lifeforms on Earth then, and they were either driven into hiding by the aliens, or were drawn into a compact with them.

As the centuries passed, the aliens found it expedient to enlarge their bases on Earth. Perhaps they found that their home planet was orbiting a dying star and they realized that they had to find a new home. If all of the contact reports contain a grain of truth, then they closely resemble us and come from an environment similar to ours. Therefore the Earth might be more suitable to them than any other planet in our solar system, or even in the entire galaxy.

But while they were preparing to evacuate their own planet, we were breeding rapidly, and also progressing technically. Recognizing this, and realizing our fierce, warlike nature, the aliens were forced to adopt a subtle, long-range plan – a plan to commandeer our planet as suddenly and as painlessly as possible. Additional bases would have to be established prior to the final, overt action. We would have to be kept either totally unaware of their activities, or confused and uncertain about it all. As the plan neared completion, more and more people would have to be enlisted to help prepare the way for the arrival of the final armada. The evacuation or transfer would be an enormous operation, and the ultimate "takeover" would be on a global scale. It would probably be achieved in a single day of our time.

More and more, the massive numbers of UFO sightings in 1966-67 seem to uphold this "hostility theory." The obviously covert activities of the objects in remote, thinly populated areas, far removed air force bases, radar nets, and major military installations further indicates a planned operation based upon the element of surprise. In addition, we are confronted with the enigma of the unidentified people who visit UFO witnesses in these areas, and harass or threaten them into silence.

Reports on the activities of these mysterious individuals are now coming in from every state, and the government denies knowledge of their identity. Most of these "mystery men" are described as being dressed in dark clothing, and

they are said to be dark-skinned with Oriental features. In a number of recent cases, very tall individuals with unusual features have also turned up, sometimes accompanied by females who usually have red hair. They use ordinary automobiles for transportation, but rarely have a license plate visible.

Could it be that a "Fifth Column" is now operating amongst us, preparing for the final stage of the UFOs' unknown plan? In 1967, there were over 1,000 inexplicable power failures reported in areas of intense UFO activity, and something new was added – telephone failures. Phone companies have their own power supplies. During the Great Blackout of Nov. 9, 1965, the telephones continued to function in the stricken Northeast. Since then, telephones have become an object of distrust among ufologists. Innumerable UFO witnesses report bizarre telephone problems after revealing details of their sightings to the press or to local UFO investigators.

Many ufologists throughout the country received strange threatening calls this past summer, warning them to get out of the UFO field. Whoever is committing these "hoaxes" must have either unlimited funds (for monumental phone bills), or they must possess the technical equipment necessary to cut into the phone system. To accomplish the latter, they would also need a thorough knowledge of how the telephone system really works. It is improbable that this kind of telephone interference could be accomplished by equipment aboard objects hovering in the air. It would almost have to be done from the ground. AT&T is "baffled," and apparently unable to do much about the complaints pouring in.

In a speech before the 1967 Congress of Scientific Ufologists in New York City, Prof. Gordon Evans, a political scientist and one of the best of the "serious-minded" ufologists, suggested that we may have made a grave mistake by trying to simplify the subject. "You don't simplify the extraterrestrial," he said. "You give him more credit than hitherto." in other words, if the UFOs are from an extraterrestrial source, they are apt to be up to something far more complex than a simple aerial survey of our planet.

UFOs are a part of man's long history on this planet. If they are extraterrestrial, and there is no evidence either contemporary or historical to prove this, then they have deliberately chosen to remain aloof of us. If they are of terrestrial origin, then they come from a group that has carefully remained hidden from us; or else they represent a natural phenomenon beyond the understanding of present-day science.

We have tried to find a simple answer to something that may be extremely complex. The amateur ufologists have struggled to support the extraterrestrial thesis, despite the contrary evidence and the clear indications that the objects have been operating consistently in specific areas. When the UFO buff has been followed by a black Cadillac containing men in dark suits, he has reasoned that he was being harassed by the CIA or "government" because he "knew" that the UFOs are manned by three-foot tall Martians. When his phone misbehaved – apparently "bugged" – he was sure that those same "government agents" were out to "shut him up" and destroy his collection of yellowing newspaper clippings.

Unfortunately, the UFO buffs have spread their anti-Air Force and anti-government paranoia until, today, the general public is whispering about a conspiracy to suppress UFO information. As a result, fewer and fewer people are reporting their sightings and experiences to the government. And this may be precisely what the "aliens" had in mind all along. How could the government take any real action, or investigate the situation properly, if they have been cut off from their central source of information – the public at large?

Maybe it's all a sucker's game, and we're the ones who have been the suckers. So long as there are UFO skeptics in government and out, and so long as there are people who cannot comprehend the meaning of events, the UFO controllers can continue to play this game with us. They could hide a flying saucer a mile from your home, and you would never even realize it. Even if you saw that saucer every night for months on end, you would be more apt to believe that it was coming from Mars every night, or that each object was a different one. Such is our present fallacious line of reasoning.

The 1964-67 outbreak of rarely publicized incidents in the air and on the ground should, at the very least, impel us to launch a crash program to find out exactly what these things are, and what they are really doing here. Our government spends millions of dollars annually on such things as fisheries and studies of butterflies, but the Air Force could only filter out $500,000 to a handful of physicists and psychologists at the Univ. of Colorado for UFO investigations.

We'd all better pray that they discover and are able to prove that the UFOs are merely a natural phenomenon because, if these things are manufactured objects, we are in deep trouble... We may have already lost a war without even

knowing that one existed.

AFTERWORD

"A QUESTION OF RESPONSIBILITY"

Recently, an American UFO journal published a sighting by "a UFO researcher who requests to remain anonymous because he is not out for fame – only facts." Throughout the modern UFO epoch, both ufologists and UFO skeptics have labored under the delusion that UFO reports and reporters are often motivated by a desire for personal publicity and notoriety – that they are "out for fame." Actually, the reverse is true. General witnesses are usually most reluctant to permit their names to be used in print, and those who have granted such permission have often suffered irresponsible harassment, not at the hands of the Air Force or the mischievous "Men in Black," but by the avid UFO buffs themselves. This harassment sometimes becomes so acute that the witnesses desperately begin denying their earlier reports, adding to the mass of speculation about mysterious "suppression."

In one of my earliest magazine articles, I briefly mentioned the "contact" claim of a Californian TV repairman and ham radio operator, Mr. Sidney Padrick in 1965. Mr. Padrick sent a letter of protest to the magazine, asserting that while he believed his story was true, he no longer wished his name to be associated with the subject.

In 1968, I interviewed a young man in Adelphi, Maryland who described an extraordinary encounter with a flying saucer, and a subsequent visit to another planet. He asked that his name not be used. A year or so later, a group of UFO buffs in Washington, D.C. induced him to appear publicly on radio and give a lecture describing his alleged experiences. His name was revealed, of course. In a letter dated Aug. 11, 1970, this percipient, Thomas Monteleone, stated:

> Ever since those appearances, I have been pestered and plagued by a horde of kooks. They call, write, stop to visit, etc. They drove me crazy. Some of my very close friends began to advise me of the dangers to my reputation that these types of individuals were posing. I decided to tell them all, once and for all, that I desired no more public contact. Although the experiences I had were completely true, I sometimes wish I had never revealed them to anyone. The only reason I made them known was

> because I thought I could help to verify and uncover some of the mystery that shrouds the UFO phenomenon… I should have kept my mouth shut like I had planned to, when you first interviewed me.

Unfortunately, Mr. Monteleone's experiences were not unique. I usually avoid "blind" (anonymous) accounts in my articles and books. Many of the witnesses I have named (with their express permission) have later complained to me about the outrageous harassment to which they have been subjected. The most common complaint is the lack of courtesy displayed by self-styled UFO investigators, who belligerently invade their privacy at all hours of the day and night.

A carload of teenagers or college students might suddenly drive up unannounced at 10 p.m. The youngsters flourish membership cards to some UFO organization and literally demand an interview. These interviews are often conducted at an inept, impolite, and even insulting level. After a few such interviews, the witnesses are naturally reluctant to submit to any more.

Insulting phone calls are also common. A number of witnesses have told me of calls they have received, often from long distance, from persons purporting to be well-known UFO investigators. "How much did Keel pay you to say this?" is one favorite phrase of these callers. Antagonistic mail on the same order is also common. Many witnesses have passed along the strange, often outrageous letters they have received from individuals well known in ufology. Any witness who undergoes this sort of treatment naturally quickly assumes that all UFO enthusiasts are crazy. They soon refuse to have anything to do with any of them.

Soon after my articles on the "Mothman" sightings in Pt. Pleasant, WV appeared in print, the named witnesses were inundated with phone calls, letters, and personal visits from untrained, impolite UFO enthusiasts. Eventually the local sheriff adopted a policy of denying everything that had been published on the events in Pt. Pleasant. (I should point out that many other writers and reporters had investigated and written about those events independent of me.) Today, very few of the people in Pt. Pleasant are willing to even discuss the affair with any outsiders.

Many ufologists tend to confuse excessive suspicion with objectivity. Actually,

the suspicion that one finds among ufologists usually follows the classic patterns of paranoia. The field does seem to attract schizophrenic-paranoiacs. Such types are often driven by an urge to attain personal publicity and recognition. They often assume that others, such as the average people who become UFO witnesses, suffer from a similar urge.

In truth, the average person has no desire for publicity, and certainly has no desire whatsoever to be connected with any "far out" subject. The UFO enthusiasts have transferred their own shortcomings to the witnesses through their speculations. These two unfortunate traits, the urge for personal publicity and the tendency to apply excessive suspicion to all things ufological, have generated a large part of the UFO lore and, more important, created and sustained the aura of ridicule that has surrounded the subject for twenty years.

In 1969, I compiled a special issue for England's Flying Saucer Review, which contained detailed reports on a number of significant new cases that had been carefully investigated by myself and others. Soon after the special issue (called Beyond Condon) appeared, one of America's best-known UFO researchers circulated an incredible "open letter" not only accusing me of having fabricated the cases out of whole cloth, but also of having "invented" some of the other contributors to the magazine, such as Richard S. Hack!

While such tactics are amusing to professionals outside the UFO field, they demonstrate the sad state of ufology in general. The field has always been dominated by petty gossip (usually totally unfounded), amateurish speculation, and unchecked hearsay. Many people have found expression for their immaturity in ufology. Emotional believers have added to the bedlam by accepting unverified nonsense as fact whenever it fell into the pattern of their beliefs.

New myths are constantly being added to the UFO maze. One of the most popular "truths" of ufology, at the present time, is that the "negative" Condon Report effectively squelched public interest in the subject. The truth is that the Condon Report received very little national publicity when compared to such things as the recent Report of the Presidential Commission on Pornography. The Condon Report sold very few copies in paperback. Various independent polls have shown that the average American has never even heard of the "Condon Report," and that only 12% of the working press has heard of it. The Condon Report has had a negligible effect on public opinion, and it has

received the most publicity from the UFO enthusiasts themselves! If the UFO enthusiasts had not discussed it angrily at lectures, on radio and television, etc., the Condon Report would have had even less effect. But the buffs will undoubtedly blame the steady decline of ufology on Dr. Condon for years to come.

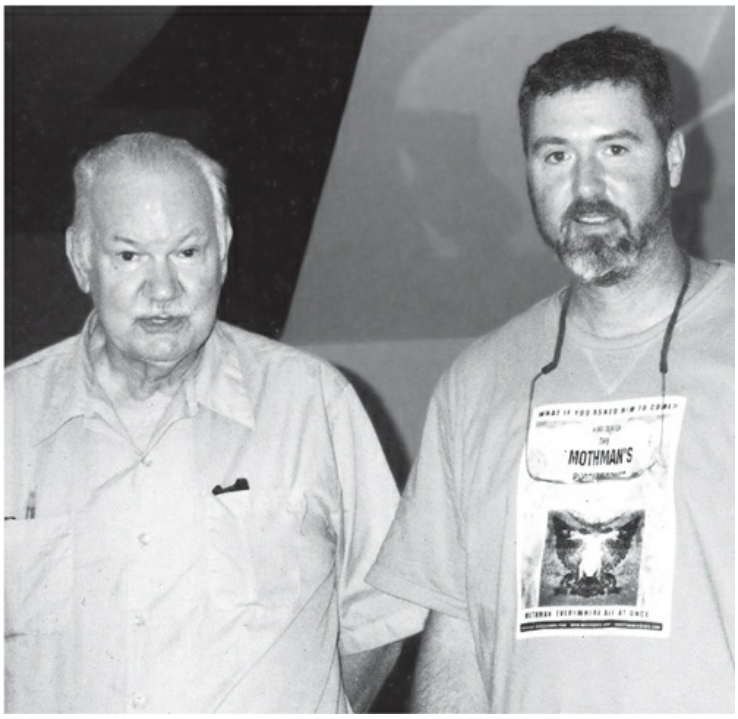
When one reviews the history of the past twenty-three years objectively, we are confronted with a set of appalling facts. The emotional ("Disclosure") causes and anti-government tirades of the past served no purpose and obtained no results. The endless personality clashes and publicity-seeking "ego trips" of the leading ufologists have only contributed to the ridicule and nonsense. Ufology has made virtually no discernible progress since 1947. Indeed, the interested scientists and journalists of the 1947-55 period made stronger statements and conducted more systematic research than any of the present crop.

Virtually nothing of importance has been said or done since 1955. Instead, the modern UFO witnesses choose to remain silent rather than involve themselves with the "kooks" engaged in UFO research. The Air Force has abandoned the field altogether, thus eliminating the favorite target of the emotionalists.

If we are to restore ufology to even the 1955 level, we must first introduce a sense of responsibility and rationalism. Witnesses must be approached with courtesy and understanding, not with rude suspicion. Logic and a sound methodology must replace the hysterical speculation. Before flying saucers can become respectable, the flying saucer enthusiasts must find respectability themselves.

-John Keel

(From Flying Saucers magazine, June 1971)



John Keel (left) and Andy Colvin (right) prior to the unveiling of the Mothman statue in Pt. Pleasant, WV, 2003.